The Archipelago Wars

by Gen.Reaper

Category: How to Train Your Dragon
Language: English
Status: Completed
Published: 2013-04-17 15:39:57
Updated: 2014-06-05 14:06:45
Packaged: 2016-04-26 14:55:40
Rating: T
Chapters: 27
Words: 72,545
Publisher: www.fanfiction.net
Summary: Taking place four years after the end of the Gene Corp War, the Viking Tribes and the United States along with it's allies in the Coalition now face a new threat as the Outcasts return while another force prepares to make it's first move and set the Barbaric Archipelago ablaze with war. Rated T for Teen for some violence, minor suggestive themes, and some coarse language.

1. Chapter 1

The Archipelago Wars

The Story So Far

Four years of undisturbed peace have passed since the end of the Gene Corp War as both the Viking Tribes and the United States benefit from the economic upturn brought about by the quick rise of inter-dimensional trading as the Vikings use the funds gained from the tributes paid by the Coalition for assisting the multinational groups of scientists in their studies of the dragons to purchase electronics and other goods to improve their lifestyles while also selling items such as handcrafted weapons and pottery to collectors and museums. But despite the peace, the Viking Tribes, the Hairy Hooligans in particular have also been spending their funds to improve their military capabilities by purchasing surplus or obsolete weapons from the United States and hiring military advisers and former soldiers to help train their forces in the arts of modern warfare and some of the Vikings' leaders have shown interest in the possibilities of creating empires using their new weapons. On the other side, the American's People Party(APP) and it's armed branch, the technologically advanced, American's People's Military(APM) and the regular American armed forces has kept a keen eye out for any signs of possible conflict in both dimensions and has worked frivolously to improve it's rapid-deployment and intelligence gathering capabilities to ensure that they're never caught by surprise again.

However the United States, it's allies in the Coalition, and the

Viking Tribes have all neglected to keep tabs on the Outcast Tribe, who have been atypically quiet since before the outbreak of the Gene Corp War a mistake that will soon cost them dearly while in the shadows another power is about to make it's first move against the Vikings.

Chapter One: Peaceful Times

**Isle of Berk **

April 5**th****, 2245 **

The chief dragon trainer of the Berk Dragon Academy, Hiccup Horrendous Haddock the Third and Toothless were standing aside the Hairy Hooligan's main training adviser, APM Drill Sergeant, Adah Brown as they watched a group of young Viking Warriors practiced dismantling and cleaning their American-made GK-15 Assault Rifles

"I think they're starting to catch on now!" Adah said to Hiccup, who couldn't help but to look at the Sergeant's mechanical right arm, "What is it kid? Never seen a prosthetic arm before?"

"Not like that one..." Hiccup replied

The Sergeant laughed

"Sorry I forgot where I was..." He replied as he examined the mechanical arm

"How did you lose it?" Hiccup asked him

"Training accident, some dumb-ass Marine managed to get a hold of a laser rifle that somebody had deactivated the DNA lock on for some reason and it mis-fired, cutting it right off." He replied, "Had to sit out for most of the Gene Corp War because of it."

"Dear Odin that's horrible..." Hiccup said

"Not the worst thing that could have happened to me, if the beam had come any closer, it would've been fatal." Adah replied

"What happened to the Marine?" Hiccup asked him

"I believe he was dishonorably discharged." He replied, "But he was probably drafted back in during the war."

One of the Viking Warriors dropped their rifle to the ground, but immediately picked it up before inspecting it for damage and then continuing to reassemble it.

"Lets just hope he doesn't do that in battle if another war breaks out." Hiccup said to Adah, who nodded

"So how have things been going on at the dragon academy? Trained any new dragons yet?" He asked him

"We caught a Changewing about two days ago and we've been working on taming it and learning more about the species as a whole...with the help of the scientists of course." Hiccup replied

"A Changewing? Isn't that the species that's like a chameleon?" Adah asked him

"I don't know what that even is, but I guess so." He replied, "But we're finding that's it's actually really curious and friendly once it gets used to you."

"Well you learn something new everyday." Adah said to him

Meanwhile in the Great Hall , Hiccup's father and the chieftain of the Hairy Hooligan Tribe, Stoick the Vast was with the village's blacksmith and dragon dentist, Gobber the Belch

"Stoick, we haven't seen or head anything from Alvin and the Outcasts since before the Gene Corp War." Gobber said to Stoick

"Which is what has me concerned, the village was perfectly vulnerable during the Gene Corp War and they didn't even try to take it." He replied

"Maybe they finally decided to leave us alone after the whole kidnapping ordeal?" Gobber asked him

"Gobber, I know Alvin, he never gives up on anything and as long as he's alive, the Outcasts are a threat to us all." He replied

"Whatever you say Stoick, but I doubt he'll want to attack us when we have the backing of the Americans and their allies." Gobber said to him.

"He won't let that stop him from trying." He replied when Astrid Hofferson came into the great hall with Stormfly

"Have you seen Hiccup?" Astrid asked Stoick

"I think he and Toothless are with Sergeant Brown." He replied

"Thanks." Astrid said before heading out of the Great Hall and mounting onto Stormfly before taking off into the air before finding Hiccup and Toothless as they watched Brown dismissed the Viking warriors

"There you are Hiccup! Been looking all over for you!" She said to Hiccup as she and Stormfly landed

"Is something going on?" He asked her

"No, just wanting to know where you've been all day." She replied as she dismounted from Stormfly before she looked at the Sergeant, "How was today's class?"

"They're getting better, but they're nowhere near APM material, I'll tell you that." He said to her, "So have you guys heard anything from the your friends in the APMAC?"

"You mean the 502nd? Well no we haven't actually." Hiccup replied, "Is there something going on?"

"Well I heard from the grapevine that one of the Night Furies are getting married to their chief airplane mechanic." Brown said to him

"WHAT?!" Hiccup and Astrid bother said at the same time

In Route to Cape Girardeau Air Base

502**nd**** Special Operations Air Squadron **

The post-human Night Furies, Barnes and Samantha were with their three children as they slept in the cargo hold of one of the APMSF strategic airlifter that was flying them back to Cape Girardeau along with the rest of the 502nd, post-human dragons, and the APMSF 1st Stormtrooper Legion after the spending the last week and a half in North Africa, participating in a series of multinational war games with military forces from Russia, Israel, the European Federation, and the South African Federation

"Barnes! Sam! If you guys are asleep in there, it's time for you guys to get up! We're almost at the air base!" Shouted Captain Jack Franz Ramirez to Barnes and Samantha over the radio of their translation collars, waking up both them and their children

"Thank you Dice Two." Barnes replied tiredly with his translation collar as he got up, unwrapping his wing from Samantha before yawning as he stretched his legs while one of his daughters, Anna lifted her head up and yawned before she got up and stretched

"I think that's the best sleep I've had in a while." She said to her father while her mother and siblings, Leon and Zoey started to get up

"Well that's what happens after nearly 48 hours of no sleep." He replied, "You better go check on your future husband."

Anna nodded before going to check on her future husband, Preston Marlowe, who was strapped onto a cot while he slept with a maintenance manual covering his face while he looked at Samantha who was licking a minor injury on her thigh that she had gotten during the war games

"Sam, you're going to be okay. It's only a flesh wound." Barnes said to her

Samantha stopped licking the wound and looked at her husband

"I'm just cleaning it!" She said to him telepathically, "And have you called your dad to make sure he sent the invitations for the wedding to the dragon riders yet?!"

"Shit I forgot, I'll call him once we land." He replied

Samantha sighed and rolled her eyes

"The next time I suggest putting your dad in charge of invitations for anything, slap me." She said to him

"I'm sure he sent them anyway and if he didn't, I'm sure he has his reasons." He replied

Samantha snorted

**APM Command Bunker **

**Downtown Cape Girardeau **

Barnes' father and the president of the United States, Reaper was in his office looking at paperwork when Director of the CIA, Luke Twones came in through the door

"Am I disturbing anything?" Twones asked Reaper

"Not at all, go ahead and take a seat." He replied as he placed the paperwork into a folder that he placed down onto his desk while Twones sat down in one of the chairs in front of his desk, "So what's going on?"

"We've been continuing our search for that lost Gene Corp facility of your's and we've came across a tidbit of information that survived Gene Corp's purge of their databases." Twones said to him as he opened his briefcase before reaching into it and pulling a folder that he handed to Reaper, who took the folder and read it's contents, "Apparently overthrowing the APP and turning people into dragons weren't the only things on his agenda."

Reaper nodded and placed the folder down

"My question is why was he interested in making deals with the Romans?" Reaper asked him

Twones shrugged

"We don't know, but whatever the deals he made with were, it can't be good for our Viking friends." He said to him

"Oh crap..." Reaper said

"What?" Twones asked him

"I forgot to send the invitations for my granddaughter's wedding to the dragon riders." He replied

"Why can't Barnes and Samantha do that themselves?" Twones asked him

"Because they've been in North Africa for the past few weeks participating in those war games and they put me in charge before they left." He replied as he got onto his computer

"Well when's the wedding?" Twones asked him

"Two days from now." He replied as he picked up his phone, "I just hope they haven't find out about it from their training adviser because it was all over APM Weekly."

"I'd be hoping more that they're not blaming Barnes and Samantha for not sending them invitations." Twones said to him

"That too..." He replied as he typed in a phone number of his phone's

keypad, but before he could press enter, the phone started to ring

"That's the riders isn't it?" Twones asked him

Reaper nodded

"Unfortunately." He said as he pressed the talk button, "Before you guys start, it's my fault. Barnes and Sam put me in charge of sending you guys your invitations to Anna's wedding while they and the 502nd went with the 1st Legion to the multinational war games in North Africa."

"Well I guess that explains why we weren't able to reach them..." Hiccup replied from the other side

"Well they're on their way back right now and I'll probably be getting a ear full from them about this later." Reaper said to him, "Just let me make the arrangements for a VTOL to go pick you and your dragons up and let me guess, Sergeant Brown told you about the wedding?"

"He did." Hiccup said to him

"Figured as much." He replied, "Well guess we'll be seeing you guys soon."

"Okay, thanks for inviting us...just be sure not to forget next time." Hiccup said to Reaper

"I won't." He replied, "Bye."

"Bye." Reaper said before hanging up and looking at Twones, "Now back to our discussion about Gene Corp's interests in Rome. I want eyes and ears in the Roman Empire as soon as possible, if Gene Corp has facilities there I want to know about them before we have a Second Gene Corp War in our hands, you got that?"

Twones nodded

"It'll take some time, but it shall be done Reaper." He said to him, "Shouldn't we notify the Coalition and the chieftains of the Viking Tribes though?"

"We will once we have a better idea on what Gene Corp was up to with these deals. But until then, we keep our lips sealed." He replied

Twones nodded

2. Chapter 2

Chapter Two: The Outcasts

**The Isle of Berk **

**Four Hours Later **

It was late evening as a APM UH-55 Mallard Transport VTOL, escorted

by two AH-57 Crow gunships flew toward the island while the dragon riders and their mounts watched with Stoick, Gobber, and Brown

"That's one helluva of a escort." Adah said to them as the Mallard came down for a landing while the AH-57s stopped and hovered

"Probably wanted to make sure we had a safe trip." Hiccup replied as the VTOL deployed it's landing gear before touching down, kicking up a cloud of dirt before the pilots turned down the strength of it's dual turbofan engines and then opening the back door of the passenger compartment as the co-pilot ran toward them

"You may already know about this, but on the way here we saw this huge ass fleet of ships heading toward here." The Co-Pilot said to them

"What banner were they flying under?" Stoick asked him

"Well we were flying at a relatively high altitude when he spotted it so we couldn't make any symbols, but we did see dragons flying over the ships." He replied, "I thought you guys were the only tribe to have tamed dragons to the point of riding them?"

"We are...or at least we were." Hiccup said to him, "Where was this fleet?"

"A few miles out, they could be coming into visual range in about a few hours." He replied

Stoick, Gobber, the riders, and Brown exchanged looks with each other

"Is it possible that you can take us to this fleet so we can see it for ourselves?" Stoick asked the Co-Pilot

"One of the Crows will take you." He replied

"Have you contacted Cape Girardeau?" Brown asked him

"Negative, should we?" He replied

Stoick shook his head

"We don't want your people mobilizing for war for something that just could be a false alarm." He said to Brown and the Co-Pilot, "Tell one of your escorts to take us to this fleet and just in case, I want you to stay here."

The Co-Pilot nodded and ran back to the VTOL

Stoick turned to Brown

"Sergeant, I want you to tell Spitelout to ready our warriors just in case." He said to him

Brown nodded and ran off while Stoick, Gobber, and the dragon riders mounted onto their dragons when the co-pilot came running

"Viper Three will take you to the fleet." He said to them pointing to one of the Crows

"Thank you." Hiccup replied before they and their dragons took off

"I can't say I like the sound of this." Toothless said to Hiccup telepathically

"You and me both." He replied before they followed the Crow gunship out to sea while the dragon riders pulled out the radio headsets that Barnes had given during the island campaign of the Gene Corp War so they could communicate with the pilot and gunner of the gunship

"Can you hear us?" Astrid asked them over the radio

"Loud and clear." The Pilot replied, "You guys stay close now because something tells me that we're going want to get out in a hurry if things get hairy."

"Roger that." Hiccup said to her

The gunship led the dragon riders far out to sea before the fleet came into view

"There it is, damn, it's even larger up close." The Gunship's Gunner said over the radio while Hiccup pulled out his spyglass and extended it out so he could a closer look at the ships and noticed they were all flying under the banner of the Outcast Tribe

"Those are Outcast ships!" Hiccup shouted before several Outcast riding dragons attacked them and the gunship

"Get them!" One of the Outcast shouted

"Bug out! Bug out!" The Pilot shouted screamed over the radio as did evasive maneuvers while the gunner pulled the trigger for it's 30mm chaingun that was mounted of the fuselage beneath the cockpit, quickly gunning down several of the Outcast dragon riders while the Hairy Hooligan riders flew back to Berk

"Dear Thor! How did they learn to tame dragons?!" Stoick shouted

"I don't know...unless...Mildew taught them..." Hiccup replied

"Mildew?! That traitorous wretch!" Astrid shouted

"No use in getting mad now, we need to get back to Berk and start preparing for the Outcasts." Gobber replied

The Outcast Tribe's chieftain watched as the flying machine that was with Hiccup and Hairy Hooligan Tribe Dragon riders as it did evasive maneuvers while ripping apart the pursuing Outcast dragon riders with it's weapon while he rode on Gravedigger, his Whispering Death

"What in Thor's name is that thing Alvin?" Asked Savage, who was riding on his Deadly Nadder, Killer

"No idea, but it's helping the Hairy Hooligans." Alvin replied before

flames started to shoot out of the back of the flying machine as it greatly increased it's speed before a white cloud appeared in front as it zoomed off toward Berk generating a loud boom and a invisible shock wave that knocked it's pursuers out of the skies

"Did you see how fast that thing was flying?!" Savage asked him

"Of course I did! I'm not blind!" He replied

"Should we continue on to Berk?" Savage asked

"We're not stopping because of a single flying machine." Alvin replied

**Isle of Berk **

**A Few Minutes Later **

The gunship arrived at Berk at the same time as the dragon riders who were greeted by Sergeant Brown and Spitelout as soon as they landed

"So what was it?" Spitelout asked

"It's the Outcasts...and they have dragons. Gather all the warriors and weapons you can and starting preparing defenses around the village." Stoick said to him

"We've just sent a emergency transmission to Cape Girardeau, hopefully we'll get a response soon." The Pilot of the Gunship said over the radio

"This is going to get ugly Stoick." Gobber said to Stoick

"I know it is Gobber, which is why we need to prepare. I want you and Brown to take all the elderly and younglings to the caves on Raven Point where they'll be safe." He replied, "Hiccup, I want you to take the others and patrol the area around the island to keep a lookout for Alvin and his fleet."

"Yes sir." Brown said to him

**APM Command Bunker **

Alarms blared as Reaper entered the nerve center where Generals Earl Smict and Marshal Conrad and Secretary of Defense, Carille Paxton were already discussing the situation on Berk

"What's going on?" Reaper asked them

"We received a emergency transmission from one of the Crow gunships we went with the VTOL to pick up the dragon riders, Berk is about to invaded by a hostile Viking Tribe called the Outcasts, who have somehow managed to train dragons to the same level as the Hairy Hooligans." Conrad replied

"What do we know about them?" Reaper asked him

"Not much." He replied

"Figures as much." Reaper said to them, "How long will it be until we get boots on the ground in Berk?"

"Several hours to get a full task force ready, but a small quick reaction force could be ready for deployment in at least four or less hours." Smict replied

"Contact the 502nd and the APMSF 1st Legion, they know the Vikings better than any other forces we have." Reaper said to him, "They'll be enough to help the Hairy Hooligans defend the island until we can deploy a larger force."

"Exactly what I was thinking." Smict said to him

"Reaper, sir. Shouldn't we be focusing on getting more Intel about these Outcasts before we throw everything have at them?" Paxton asked Reaper

"That is normal procedure, but unfortunately we don't have enough time for that." He replied, "What about the other Viking Tribes?"

"No word from them yet." Smict said to him

"And what about the Coalition? The Scientists there will no doubly be warning the governments of their respective nations about the Outcasts and they will no doubly send forces too to protect them and their interests." Paxton asked Reaper

"Well I don't give a shit about what rest of the Coalition is doing, I want to get boots on the ground in Berk. We have too many interests there as well to lose it to these damn Outcasts." Reaper said to him

**Cape Girardeau Air Base **

Several Minutes Later

Commander of the APMSF 1st Legion, Charles Karlson and his wife, Tesla were sound asleep with their two children, Calvin and Sheva when they were awaken by the sound of wailing alarms

"Not now..." Karlson said, thinking the alarms were another drill before Barnes ran into their hangar

"Karlson! We just got word Berk is about to be attacked and we're being mobilized as a quick reaction force and it's all hands on deck!" He shouted to them, "Meet me at the armory in five minutes for briefing!"

"I'll be right there!" Karlson replied as he got up with Tesla

"You two stay here!" Tesla said to Calvin and Sheva as they left the hangar

Calvin snorted

"I hate it when do this to us." He said to Sheva while outside Karlson and Tesla joined the other post-human dragons outside the armory hangar where Barnes was talking to a holographic General

Conrad before he turned his attention to the gathered dragons

"I'm guessing that everybody's here...we've just received word from command that the Isle of Berk is getting to be invaded by a rival tribe of Vikings called the Outcasts, who have somehow managed to tame their own dragons and have amassed a massive armada of ships that is bearing down on Berk as we speak." Barnes said to them, "And in reaction to this act of aggression, command has ordered us and the APMSF 1st Legion to be deployed to Berk as a quick reaction force until a larger force can be prepared to deployment."

There were quiet whispers amongst the post-human dragons and the nearby APMSF, APM, and US Military Personnel before Barnes continued

"I will say this now, we have little Intel on the Outcasts or what they're capable of, so we can't take them lightly." He said, "But what we do know is that they don't know we exist yet, so they're going to be in a helluva of surprise when we drop in on them."

"What about their dragons?" Asked Jones, a British Deadly Nadder

"Well if they're anything like the dragons of the Hairy Hooligans, they're going to extremely loyal to their riders which mean they're also going to be _extremely_ hostile to us and the Hooligans. So they're to be terminated with extreme prejudice." Barnes replied, "I know a lot of us have never killed a dragon in their life because I haven't either, but we can't let this stop us from completing our objective, which is to make sure Berk doesn't fall to these Outcasts before reinforcements can arrive."

"Glad we got that new armor then." Said Vasili, a Russian Gronckle

"Yeah, except that armor isn't exactly designed for dragon vs dragon combat, it's designed to protect us from small arms fire and NBC threats." Replied Casey, a APMSF Deadly Nadder, "But it should be more than enough against any weapons the Outcasts can throw us, except maybe a direct hit from catapult."

"Armor or not, as I said earlier, the Outcasts are not to be taken lightly because as far as we know they could be former dragon slayers like the Hairy Hooligans." Barnes said to them, "So no stupid shit okay?"

The post-human dragons snorted or nodded in agreement

"Good, I want everybody to get suited up ASAP so we can start moving out." Barnes said to them, "Karlson, you know what you and Tesla have to do."

Karlson snorted and left with Tesla to rally the 1st Legion while Barnes and Samantha went into the hangar with the other post-human dragons where APM technicians were waiting for them inside

**Isle of Berk **

Sergeant Brown was walking alongside Gobber as they escorted the elderly and younger Vikings up a path to Raven's Point

"Something tells me this isn't the first run in you guys have had with the Outcasts." Brown said to Gobber, who nodded

"Far from it." He replied

"So what you call them me about them?" Brown asked them

"They're mostly the descendants of criminals who were banished from this tribe and the others to the Outcast Lands, which are far to north of here." Gobber replied, "Their leader Alvin, however is a nasty one."

"Alvin...as in the Alvin the Treacherous? I think I heard you and Stoick talking about him a while back." Brown said to him, "I'm guessing they don't like each other."

"Alvin and Stoick have a history of...disagreements and not to mention that the Outcasts have been wanting to take Berk for themselves for a long time now." He replied

"Why's that?" Brown asked him

"Because it's one of the best islands in the Archipelago, defiantly when compared to the likes of the Outcast Lands." He replied while in the village, Stoick was with Spitelout Jorgenson as they oversaw the over saw the construction of defenses around and inside the village

"You think Alvin will try sailing into the harbor?" Spitelout asked Stoick

Stoick shook his head

"It's too obvious, Alvin will probably try landing on the coast somewhere and advance overland." He said to him

"You think he's going to try to lay siege to us?" Spitelout asked him

"I wouldn't put it past him and who knows what could happen now that he has dragons." He replied

"Thor help us." Spitelout said to him, "But at least we have the weapons we've gotten from our deals with the other world to even the odds and then the Americans are sending reinforcements."

Toothless and Hiccup landed nearby

"We just found a empty Outcast Ship in Black Heart Bay and there's foot prints on the beach leading into the forest!" Hiccup shouted to them

"Must be a scouting party." Spitelout replied

"Where are the others?" Stoick asked Hiccup

"They're searching the forests!" He replied

"Oh gods, Adah and Gobber are still in the forest with the elderly

and children!" Spitelout said to Stoick while we returned to Sergeant Brown and Gobber as they continued to escort the elderly and young Vikings up Raven's Point to safety in the caves there

"Outcasts!" A Viking Elder shouted as several Outcast Warriors charged out of the village wielding swords and axes while Brown quickly pulled out his M1014 Shotgun

"Get them to the cave! I'll take care of these guys!" Brown said to Gobber as he went toward the attacking Outcasts as the Viking Elders and children fled up the mountain with Gobber while the Outcast stopped at the sight of the American come at them with his strange contraption and his metal mechanical arm

"Who in Thor's name are you?!" One of the Outcasts asked Brown, who pulled back the pump of the shotgun, chambering the first round

"War." He replied before he blasted away one of the Outcasts with a slug round before pulling back the pump again to eject the empty shell casing and chambered a new shell as the Outcasts stared in shock at their dead comrade, who had a massive chest wound from where the slug round had hit him before they started screaming in anger and charged at the American, who didn't hesitated to fire several more slug rounds into the charging Outcasts, killing and wounding several of them before emptying the clip, Brown then retreated up the mountain as he loaded another clip into the shotgun, but one Outcast caught up to him, but Brown quick dispatched him by punching him in the face with his metal arm, breaking the Outcast's nose and knocking him out cold while Brown continued to retreat before he finished reloading his shotgun and took cover behind a tree and waited for the Outcasts to come within range before popping out and firing several shots at them, killing the remaining Outcasts as Astrid and Stormfly arrived

"Brown! Where are the others?" Astrid asked him

"Gobber took them up Raven's Point to the caves. "He replied as he replaced the second empty clip with a fresh one while Snotlout and the Thornston twins landed nearby on their dragons and saw the dead and wounded Outcasts

"These Outcasts aren't so tough." Brown said

"This was only a scouting party unfortunately." Astrid replied, "You're just lucky you had that shotgun with you."

"So what should we do with these guys?" Brown asked her as he looked at the wounded Outcasts that including the unconscious one that had blood come from nostrils of his broken nose when Stoick, Spitelout, and Hiccup arrived with several Viking warriors

"The others are on Raven's Point." Astrid said to Stoick, who sighed in relief when he looked at Brown

"Thank you for your help." He said to him

Brown nodded

"So what are we going to do with them?" He asked them

"You leave that to us Sergeant, I want you to go find Gobber and the others to make sure their safe." Stoick replied

"Sure." Brown said as headed back for the trail

"Spitelout take the wounded to the jail, we can probably get information about Alvin's plans from them, Hiccup I want you and the others to come with me, I have an idea." Stoick said

3. Chapter 3

Chapter Three: The Invasion Begins

**USAS Patton; In route to Kansas Rift Zone **

**One Hour Later **

The post-human dragons were in one of the hangar bays of the USAS(United States Airship) Patton, the lead ship of the new _Patton_-Class Air Cruiser which was developed for use in small scale operations or transporting and supporting quick reaction forces that was taking to Berk with the APMSF 1st Legion

"We should be arriving at Berk in a hour and a half." Barnes said to the other post-human dragons after talking to the captain of the airship over the radio, "But by then, the Outcasts will probably already have made landfall and will be attacking the Hairy Hooligans, so our LZ is likely going to be hot."

"Figures as much." Said Carville, a Texan Monstrous Nightmare

Isle of Berk

It was light at night as Hiccup and the other dragon riders were taking a quick nap with their dragons in a sheltered dugout when they were awaken by the all too familiar sounds of distant explosions and anti-air guns firing before they immediately jumped up and climbed onto their dragons, who ran out of the dug out before taking off and were joined by Stoick and Thornado who were with the two APM gunships which were now in a crudely painted woodland camouflage

"What's going?" Hiccup asked Stoick

"The Outcasts are attacking the harbor with the dragons and their fleet has been spotted heading toward Black Heart Bay as I expected they would!" Stoick replied as they flew toward the battle

"Engaging hostile air contacts!" One of the Crows' Gunners shouted as he pulled the trigger for it's chaingun tearing apart a Outcast and his Changewing in a hail of red tracer rounds while Hiccup and Toothless led the Hairy Hooligan dragon riders into combat against the Outcast dragon riders while in Black Heart Bay, Alvin and Gravedigger led the ships of the invasion armada into the bay where they were supposed to meet up with a scouting party, whose ship was sitting idly in the middle of the bay with no sign of the scouts while the sounds of explosions echoed from the Hairy Hooligan village as the Hairy Hooligans fought against the distraction attack on the harbor

"Where's the scouting party?" Savage asked Alvin

"Don't know." He replied as they flew toward the ship where they found the bodies of several members of the Scouting party strewn about it's deck

"Dear Thor!" Savage said as he covered his nose as he and Alvin dismounted from their dragons onto the ship to get a closer look

"No way the Hairy Hooligans or their dragons did this." Alvin said to him

"I've never seen wounds like that before!" He replied

"Me neither Savage, looks like Stoick's new friends have some serious firepower." Alvin said, "We probably should have brought more men."

"Should we proceed with the landings?" Savage asked him

"Of course! We're not going to let two flying machines and their operators stop us from conquering Berk!" He replied, "Find something to tie these bodies too and throw them into the bay before the rest of the men see them."

"Yes sir." Savage said

**Cape Girardeau Command Bunker **

Reaper was with Conrad as they monitored the situation on Berk using a holographic map that was being fed information from a RQ-10 Chimera Unmanned Aerial Vehicle(UAV) that was flying high over the island

"That's a lot of damn ships." Reaper said to Conrad as they watched the Outcast Armada sail into Black Heart Bay while the Hairy Hooligans and the two gunships fought off the Outcast dragon attack on the harbor

"Admiral Herald has a battle group preparing for transition, they should be ready in four hours and those things have more than enough firepower to turn every ship in that fleet into a funeral pyre." He replied

"But as you said, it's going to take four hours for them to get there." Reaper said to him, "I just hope the 502nd and 1st Legion can get here before the major fighting starts, where are they now?"

"About to make the jump through the Kansas Rift, which means they're only a hour away from Berk." He replied

"Well that's good, how much firepower does the USAS Patton carry anyway? Because it didn't have any weapons when I smashed that wine bottle against it." Reaper asked him

"Several batteries of SAM launchers and close-in weapon systems, she was supposed to go back to Area 51 today and have her ground attack armaments mounted." Conrad replied

"Well like the Outcasts have anything that can take her down anyway." Reaper said to him

Isle of Berk

**Outcast Camp â€“ Black Heart Bay **

Savage and Mildew were with Alvin in his command tent while the Outcast Army prepared to move out

"Our scouts are reporting that the Hairy Hooligans have formed a defensive ring of fortifications around their village which will be anything but easy to get through considering that they now have a technological advantage." Savage said to Mildew and Alvin

"Who said anything about going through it?" Alvin asked him, "Tell the men it's time." 0

4. Chapter 4

Chapter Four: The American-Outcast War

**The Isle of Berk **

**Hairy Hooligan Village **

**Sometime Later **

Hiccup and Toothless were sitting with the other dragon riders and their mounts behind some of the fortifications when the ground behind them abruptly exploded as Alvin and Gravedigger shot out from the ground followed by several Outcast Dragon Riders while Outcast Warriors used ladders and grappling hooks to climb out from the hole

"You guys go after Alvin! We'll take care of these guys!" Spitelout shouted as he picked up his GK-15 and ran with his warriors to fight the Outcast Warriors while the dragon riders got onto their mounts and took off into the air after Alvin and his riders while the APM gunships went after him as well

"You guys focus on taking out on the others! We'll go after Alvin!" Hiccup yelled to the other riders and the pilots of the gunships

"Wilco!" One of the Gunship Pilots replied

"Be careful Hiccup!" Astrid shouted to him as she and the other riders broke off to go after the other Outcast Riders while Hiccup and Toothless pursued Alvin and Gravedigger into the night skies

"Okay buddy we need to lure him somewhere they can't retreat underground." Hiccup said to Toothless snorted before Gravedigger turned around and shot rings of yellow fire and smoke at them, but they dodged the attacks and Toothless shot a plasma blast back at them, but they maneuvered it

"Nice try Hiccup, but you'll have to try better than that!" Alvin shouted back at them before Gravedigger turned around and came back at Hiccup and Toothless with his mouth wide open, but Hiccup and Toothless dodged them at the last minutes before they continued to pursue them

"Mildew's taught him well." Hiccup thought to himself as they pursued Alvin and Gravedigger over the ongoing brawl between Outcast and Hairy Hooligan Warriors with the former still pouring out from the hole created by Gravedigger

"I think your plan isn't going work Hiccup!" Toothless said to Hiccup telepathically as they pursued Alvin over the forests where the rest of the Outcast Army was advancing toward the village while Outcast archers and crossbowmen fired arrows at them

"I think you're right buddy." Hiccup replied before both he and Toothless were entangled in a pair of bolas shot up by a Outcast ballista causing them both to crash into the cove where they were immediately surrounded by Outcast Warriors as Alvin and Gravedigger came back

"For Stoick's boy you're not very bright when it comes to strategy are you?" Alvin asked him as he got off Gravedigger

"I'm not the you should be worried about!" Hiccup replied

"Oh and how is that?" Alvin asked him, "Meh, I'm not in the mood! Gravedigger! It's feeding time!"

Gravedigger narrowed his eyes and went up into the air, but before the Whispering Death could do anything, a missile came flying from over the forest and struck it in the side, knocking it out of the sky while an F-45 flew over the cove followed shortly by four APMSF Mallards that stopped to hover over the cover as APMSF Stormtroopers fast roped down to the ground firing their GK-46 Pulse Rifles at the Outcasts below while Barnes, clad in his powered armor landed nearby while Gravedigger although seriously wounded by the missile attack got up

"What took you so long?!" Hiccup asked him

"Got stuck in traffic." He replied as he turned his attention to Gravedigger

"Get out of my way, this isn't of any of your concern half-breed." The Whispering Death hissed to Barnes

Barnes snarled as Alvin and his warriors tried to fight against the APMSF Stormtroopers, whose kletonium powered armor made them impervious to the Outcasts' weapons

"Take another...step and you're dead." Barnes responded

The Whispering Death narrowed it's eyes and shot down at Barnes, who dodged the Whispering Death, who then burrowed into the ground where Barnes was standing while Hiccup realized that Toothless wasn't conscious

"Toothless?! Toothless?!" Hiccup screamed while Barnes walked back

toward them and activated the solid-state plasma blades that were attached to his tail while he used his armor's motion sensor to monitor Gravedigger's movements underground while Alvin and his men retreated from cove

"Forget about them!" Barnes shouted over his translation collar to the Stormtroopers, "Help them!"

"Yes sir!" One of the Stormtroopers replied as they ran over to Hiccup and Toothless before Gravedigger shot out of the ground a few feet away from Barnes and shot several rings of fire at him that was harmlessly absorbed by his armors' plasma shields before Barnes took off and tackled the Whispering Death wrestling it the ground while the Stormtroopers cut Hiccup free while a APMSF Medic scanned Toothless with his vita-scanner

"His right rear leg is broken, we're going to need to medevac him to the Patton!" The APMSF Medic said to the APMSF Squad Leader while Hiccup knelt down next to Toothless while a APMSF Mallard landed and deployed a squad of Heavy Stormtroopers carrying light miniguns and missile launchers that went to attack Gravedigger that was trying to throw Barnes off his back as the post-human Night Fury tried to tear at his wings

"Hold your fire! I've got this!" Barnes shouted to the Stormtroopers as he managed to grab a hold onto the Whispering Death's right wing with his mouth before ripping it out of it's socket causing Gravedigger to roar in pain as Barnes landed on the ground and threw away the disembodied wing while the Whispering Death squirmed on the ground before burrowing into the ground and never coming back up, Barnes then turned his attention back to Hiccup, who was crying

"Did you kill it?" Hiccup asked him

"I don't know, the damn thing burrowed into the ground and escaped. But good news is that it won't be flying anymore." He replied

"Barnes! We need you in the village!" Samantha shouted to Barnes over his radio

"Roger that, I'm Oscar Mike." He replied before looking at the Stormtroopers, "Stay here until that medevac arrives!"

"Yes sir." The Stormtrooper Squad Leader said as Barnes took off into the air while back in the village, Savage was riding on Killer after he and his men had managed to breach the Hairy Hooligan's defenses and were advancing into the village when several flying machines flew over them

"More flying machines?!" A Outcast shouted before they heard the sound of moving metal ahead of them as a armored war machine appeared through the black smoke of a burning hut

"Dear Thor!" Savage screamed before the armored war machine came to a complete stop and lowered the barrel of it's main gun down toward the Outcast that began to emit some kind of electrical current before it shot out some kind lighting bolt-like projectile that tore through the ranks of Alvin's men like a hot knife through butter before dissipating causing Savage's men to panic and flee as the armored war

machine made a roaring noise as it continued to move forward while Killer stood his ground and roared

"Not now!" Savage screamed as Killer shot out his tail spines at the machine that uselessly bounced off a bubble of blue energy that appeared from thin air around the machine, undeterred, Killer then shot out a plume of magnesium fire at the machine that was adsorbed by the energy bubble eventually causing the Deadly Nadder to lose all his shots as the armored war machine continued it's seemingly unstopped advance as soldiers clad in black armor appeared from the smoke behind it, "Get us out of here!"

Killer snorted and took off into the air as the weapon mounted on top of the armored war machine shot a hail of projectiles at them as they flew to join the rest of the retreating Outcast Army that was being pursued by the Hairy Hooligans and their armor-clad allies as flying machines of various types chased off the Outcast dragon riders with the help of the Hairy Hooligan dragon riders and armored dragons

"Back into the forest!" A Outcast Warrior shouted as some Outcast Warriors fled into the tunnel dug by Gravedigger that Savage and Killer headed to, but before they could reach it a flying machine flew over them and dropped a bomb into the hole that exploded beneath the ground causing it to cave in

"Forest it is then!" Savage shouted as he and Killer fled into the forest while in the air, Barnes joined Samantha and their children who were flying with Jones and Gaulle, a french Monstrous Nightmare

"What happened to Toothless and Hiccup?" Samantha asked Barnes

"Toothless has a broken rear leg, he's being medevac to the Patton as we speak." He replied

"Damn how was Hiccup taking it?" Samantha asked him

"Not very well, but luckily Toothless will be a-okay after the doctors are finished with him." He replied as the Hairy Hooligan riders joined them

"Thank gods you guys got here when you did...we heard about Hiccup and Toothless over the radio. Thanks for saving them." Astrid said to Barnes

"Just doing my job." He replied with his translation collar, "Looks like the Outcasts are done for now, lets get down to the ground and see if we can find Stoick and find out what's going on."

"I think he should be with Spitelout." Astrid said to him as they landed on the ground behind the Hairy Hooligan defenses as APMSF Stormtroopers rounded up the wounded and captured Outcasts while the Hairy Hooligans regrouped and gathered their own wounded while APMSF Mallards continued to land and take off

"Barnes, did you see how fast those Outcasts were running?!" Karlson shouted as he landed with the other APMSF dragons, "I've never seen anybody go from advance to retreat like that before!"

"This is far from over General, they're going to regroup and come back later." Astrid said to him

"And we'll be ready for them." Barnes replied with his translation, "Karlson, have you seen or head from Stoick?"

"He took off on his dragon when he heard about Hiccup and Toothless." Karlson said to him

"Dammit." He replied, "Any idea where the Outcasts are running to?"

"Probably back to their camp in Black Heart Bay." Astrid said to him while back in the cove, Hiccup was helping APMSF Medics put the still unconscious Toothless into a harness so he could be airlifted out of the cove by a Skycrane Mallard and taken to the USAS Patton when Stoick and Thornado landed in the Cove

"Hiccup! I came as soon as I heard!" Stoick shouted as he climbed off Thornado, "How bad is he hurt?"

"One of his rear legs are broken." Hiccup replied while the APMSF Medics finished placing the harness around Toothless as the Skycrane lowered a hook and cable into the cove that was then hooked onto the harness

"You're all clear!" One of the APMSF Medics said over her radio to the Winch Operator in the Skycrane that began lifting Toothless up out of the cove while another VTOL

"Where are you taking him?" Stoick asked the Medic

"The USAS Patton, we have medical personnel on standby there." He replied

Stoick nodded and patted Hiccup on the shoulder

"I'm sure Toothless will be okay Hiccup." Stoick said to him while in Black Heart Bay, Alvin has warriors arrived at the Outcast Camp to find it in complete disarray as panicked warriors climbed onto their ships and tried to push them back into the sea while dragon riders fled on their dragons

"What is going on here?!" Alvin shouted angrily

"We're getting out of here! These...these people just started coming from the skies and rained fired down upon us!" A Panicked Outcast Warrior replied

"What in Odin's name are you talking about?!" Alvin asked as Savage and Killer returned, exhausted

"What happened out there?!" Alvin asked him

"We found out who their Allies were, that's what." He replied before falling sideways off of Killer

"Everybody pull yourselves together! We're marauders, we don't run from anything!" Alvin shouted to his men, "Now get off those boats or

the Hairy Hooligans and their Allies will be the _least_ of your problems."

"What about the dragons and the riders that fled?" A Outcast asked him

"We'll worry about them later." He replied shortly before a gravely wounded Gravedigger popped out of the ground and fell with blood coming out of a wounded on his back where one of his wings used to be, "Gravedigger!"

The Whispering Death groaned as Alvin ran to it and saw the Night Fury bite marks on it's hide

"Must have been one of those armored Night Furies, we ran into four of them in the village." A Outcast Warrior said to Alvin

"Four? Four Night Furies? How did they get a hold of that many Night Furies?" Alvin asked

The Outcasts shrugged

"Well it doesn't matter, I want to find out which one of those Night Furies hurt my dragon so I call kill it." Alvin said to them

USAS Patton Hangar Bay

Stoick and Hiccup rode on Thornado landed in one of the starboard hangar bays of the USAS Patton with the Skycrane Mallard carrying Toothless and there they found Tesla with Calvin and Sheva

"What happened?" Tesla asked Stoick and Hiccup with her translation collar

"We fell into a Outcast trap, but Barnes saved us." Hiccup replied as some of the Patton's Medical Crew ran over to Toothless as the APMSF Medics removed his harness

"Get him to the medical bay!" The Lead Doctor shouted as she and the others loaded Toothless onto a large stretcher carried by a forklift that took him out of the hangar

"Thornado stay here!" Stoick said to Thornado before he and Hiccup ran over Toothless

"What are you supposed to be?" Tesla asked the Thunderdrum

"The humans call my species , Thunderdrum." He replied, "You must be another one of those crossbreeds."

Tesla nodded as a curious Calvin and Sheva stared at Thornado from behind her

"We prefer the term post-human dragons." Tesla said to him

"Sorry." He replied

"I thought Stoick owned a Timberjack or something like that?" Tesla asked him

"You mean Paul? Yes, but he's back on the island." He replied, "I was away for mating season during the last war."

"Oh, well I'm Tesla Karlson and this here is Calvin and Sheva." Tesla said to Thornado, who looked at the two young Monstrous Nightmares

"Why aren't with the others?" He asked her

"Because of them, my husband thinks they're not ready for combat." She replied

"Oh..." Thornado said, "Well they look ready to me, but I'm not your mate, so it's not my place to say what your young is ready or not."

Tesla snorted

**Patton's Medical Bay **

The Doctors rushed Toothless into the Medical Bay as Stoick and Hiccup came in after them and were greeted by the Lead Doctor

"You must by Hiccup Horrendous Haddock and Stoick the Vast, I'm Doctor Kelly Ward, the chief medical officer of the 502nd." She said to them, "Don't worry about Toothless, he's in good hands. But it will take some time for his leg to recover."

"How long?" Stoick asked her

"Depends on how severely the bone is broken." She replied as one of the APMSF Medics handed her his report on Toothless' broken leg

"How bad is it?" Stoick asked her

"It's a fractured femur, he'll need a cast and don't expect him to combat worthy." She replied, "Almost reminds me of Barnes' injury during the Gene Corp War."

"Do you know when he'll wake up?" Hiccup asked her

"No, but we'll tell you when it happens." She replied

"Mind if I...?" Hiccup asked

"Go ahead, nobody's stopping you." Ward replied

Hiccup ran and sat down on a cot that was next to Toothless

"I want to be notified if there's any change." Stoick said to Ward, who nodded

Stoick left the medical bay while back in the hangar, Karlson flew into the hangar and landed

"Dad!" Calvin cried as he and Sheva ran to their father while Thornado and Tesla watched

"Have you two been good?" Karlson asked them as he laid down and looked at his two children

Calvin and Sheva nodded while their mother came over

"So I guess things have been doing well on the island?" She asked him

"We kicked their asses, but all the Vikings are saying they're going to be back and it's looking that way." He replied telepathically

"Just be careful down there, I don't know what I'll do without you now." She said to him

"I will." He replied as Stoick came into the hangar, "Stoick! I've been looking for you!"

"General Karlson...how goes the battle?" Stoick asked him

"Outcast have retreated to their camp and it looks they're starting to regroup." He replied

"I suspected as much." Stoick said, "So what are your and Barnes' plans to hold them off?"

"Simple, we dig in and give them hell until the main forces arrives and then we kick their asses off the island." Karlson replied

"You make it sound so easy." Stoick said to him

"I never said it was going to be easy." He replied

5. Chapter 5

Chapter Five: The Quiet

**Somewhere in the Ural Mountains **

**Russian Military High Command **

Polkovnik Gosha Titov, the commander of the 70th Spetsnaz Assault Brigade entered the office of his commanding officer, General-Polkovnik Travkin who was looking out the only window in his office

"There you are Titov, be seated." Travkin said

Titov nodded and took a seat in one of the chairs in front of Travkin's desk while the General closed the blinds of the window and sat down in his chair

"One of the GRU's contacts inside the CIA managed to get a hold of some intel about the recent doings of our American friends." He said to Titov

"What is Reaper up to this time?" He asked him

"The APMSF and the CIA have uncovered bits of information inside what was left of Gene Corp's computers that MacTavish had made several deals with the Roman Empire before the outbreak of the Gene Corp War.

" Travkin replied

"Why was he making deals with the Romans?" Titov asked him, "And why are we concerned about this?"

"They don't know, Gene Corp apparently did a thorough wipe of their database after they realized they were going to lose the war." He replied, "This recent discovery was not just out of the blue either, the Americans have been searching for another Gene Corp research facility that was also mentioned in the few files they managed to recover."

"So Gene Corp possibility had or has another research facility...in the Roman Empire?" Titov asked

Travkin shrugged

"We don't know the nature of the deals Gene Corp made with the Romans, but that is certainly a possibility." He said to Titov, "Which is why we want you to take your brigade to the other dimension on a reconnaissance mission in the Mediterranean, Rome to be exact. Because what better place to look?"

"Won't the Americans notice this?" Titov asked him

"They probably will, but since they're just as interested in finding out about the deals as we are, they probably won't intervene." He replied, "Plus they're distracted with the little conflict on Berk which will no doubly be over before the end of the week."

**Isle of Berk **

**Early Morning **

Groups of APMSF Engineers were helping the Hairy Hooligans repair their defenses while Stoick, Barnes, and Karlson discussed their war plans

"Well Stoick it looks like you were right, Alvin has gathered his remaining forces and is preparing for another attack according to our surveillance drones." Karlson said to Stoick with his translation

"How many men does he have left?" He asked

"At least several divisions worth, but good news is that he hardly has any dragons left alive." Barnes replied with his translation collar, "If we're going to break the Outcast Army for good, we're going to need to take out Alvin because he'll keep coming back until he doesn't anything left to do so."

"Easier said than done." Stoick said to him, "How long until your main force arrives?"

"Two or three hours at the least." Karlson replied, "But in the meantime, we need to figure out how Alvin is going to carry out his next attack because he would be foolish to launch another frontal attack after the casualties his army sustained."

In the Outcast Camp, Alvin was planning his next move with Savage and

Mildew

"Our scouts are reporting that the Hairy Hooligans and the Americans have concentrated their forces on the eastern side of the village, so it would suicide attacking them through there again." Savage said to Alvin

"Then we'll attack from another direction." He replied

"There's only one problem with that, we can't attack from any another direction, at least from here unless we sail to another part of the island and land somewhere else." Mildew said to him

"And that's exactly what we're going to do." He replied as he looked down at the map of Berk, "Savage, I want you to take half of the fleet and army to The Long Beach on the other side of the island, from there you will be able to launch a surprise attack on the village from the West. Take Mildew here as a guide just in case you get lost."

Savage nodded

"Come along now old man, we got a job to do." He said to Mildew

Mildew nodded and left with Savage while Alvin turned toward Gravedigger, whose wounds were being treated by Outcast Healers while the Whispering Death breathed audibly

"That Night Fury is going to pay when I get my hands on it." Alvin said under his breath

**USAS Patton **

Toothless had just regained consciousness as Hiccup kept him calm while Ward wrapped a electronic cast around his broken leg

"There were we go, all nice and tug." Ward said after she finished placing the cast on, "He'll be able to walk now, but not run and you'll have to be soft on your landings if you take him out flying."

Toothless looked back at the cast and hissed making Ward jump back

"Don't worry he won't hurt you, he just doesn't like the idea that he's been injured." Hiccup said to her

"When will I know to take it off?" Toothless asked Ward telepathically

"It'll fall off on it's own." She replied

"Does this mean we can join the fight against the Outcasts?" Hiccup asked her

"He can...but I certainly would prefer that he takes it easy." She replied

Toothless snorted and climbed off the heavy cot he was in and started

to limp his way toward the door while Hiccup ran and stopped in front of him

"You heard what the doctor said Toothless, you have to take it easy!" Hiccup said to the Night Fury, who rolled his eyes and snorted before laying down

"When I get my claws on Alvin I am going to rip his limbs off one by one." Toothless thought to himself while Hiccup went to talk with Ward

"Is there any place you can put us where we won't be in the way?" Hiccup asked the Doctor

"We have a small gymnasium located near one of the hangar bays that's big enough to be comfortable." She replied

"Than you." Hiccup said to her before he returned to Toothless, "Come on buddy lets go find the gymnasium."

Toothless got up and followed Hiccup out of the infirmary while Ward watched

"What a awkward duo those two are." She said before looking down at her clipboard and writing down a few notes before turning her attention to one of the wounded Vikings that had been brought aboard while in the hallway, Hiccup and Toothless were following the overhead signs to the gymansium

"How goes the fighting on the island?" Toothless asked Hiccup telepathically

"Things have quieted down from what I heard and most of Alvin's army has been destroyed or fled after the Americans arrived." He replied

"What about the rest?" Toothless asked him

"I haven't heard anything else, but good news is that the Americans realize that the only way to defeat the Outcasts for good is to kill Alvin." He replied

Toothless snorted

"Even for them that won't be an easy task." He said to him telepathically, "Anything from the others or Barnes and his family or men?"

"Haven't seen Barnes since he saved us, but occasionally one of the pilots have stopped by to check on us." Hiccup replied, "Really wish we could be down there with them."

Hiccup and Toothless stepped aside as a wounded Hairy Hooligan Warrior was carried on a stretcher by two APMSF Medics

"I thought you said things quieted down?" Toothless asked Hiccup telepathically

"They have, the Americans have been bringing in wounded from the first attack all day along with some prisoners." He

replied

"Prisoners?" Toothless asked him, "Why are the Americans, Karlson's men in particular taking Outcasts prisoner?"

Hiccup shrugged

"Ask Tesla, she'll probably know, she was in the hangar when we came in with her and Karlson's two kids." He said to Toothless, "Also the post-human dragons has some cool looking armor now."

In the hangar bay, Tesla was keeping Calvin and Sheva close to her as a group of Outcast prisoners were escorted out of a VTOL in handcuffs and shackles under armed guard

"Keep moving!" One of the Stormtroopers shouted as he pushed one of the Outcasts forward with his foot after he stopped to look at Tesla and her children while the APMSF Officer leading the escorts approached her

"Sorry about this, the other hangars were filled to capacity." A APMSF Officer said to Tesla, who nodded as the prisoners were escorted out of the hangar

"Whatever happened to kill with extreme prejudice?" She asked the Officer, who shrugged

"Beats me ma'am." He replied while Toothless and Hiccup came in

"Hi Tesla." Hiccup said to her

"Hi Hiccup, glad to see you're okay, same to you Toothless." She replied

Toothless nodded and looked at Calvin and Sheva who were looking at him

"It's good to finally meet you in person, we've heard a lot about you from Barnes." Calvin said to him

"I'm sure you have..." Toothless replied before he looked at their mother, "Any idea why your husband's men is taking prisoners?"

Tesla made a shrug like motion with her wings

"We previously had orders to kill all Outcasts will extreme prejudice and apparently there was a change in plans somewhere along the line." She replied with her translation

"Who usually gives those type of orders?" Hiccup asked her

"Either APMSF High Command, the Secretary of Defense, Reaper, or Karlson" She replied, "But the 502nd still has orders to terminate all Outcast dragon riders."

"So I've heard..." Hiccup said as he knelt down and started to pet Calvin, who purred, "He looks just like this father."

Tesla snorted

"Oh you should see him when Karl is around, he mimics him." She said to him

"Really?" He asked her

Calvin snorted, but kept purring

"So have you heard anything from Karl or the others?" Hiccup asked her

Tesla shook her head

"Not since they brought you two aboard." She said to them

Cape Girardeau, MO

**Common Pleas Courthouse **

Reaper and Twones were watching through a TV as Paxton discussed the war against the Outcast Tribe with reporters from major news broadcasters in a press conference inside the press room of the APM High Command Bunker

"What effect have our forces had on the morale of the Outcast Army?" A News Reporter for CNN asked Paxton

"So far we have received various reports ranging from them running in fear from our tanks to them charging like madmen at them. But their self-proclaimed leader, Alvin the Treacherous has proved to be unaffected by the arrival of the 1st Legion and 502nd SOAS, which is why the Outcast Army has yet to be broken." He replied

"Did the Outcast Tribe participate in the Gene Corp War and if so, how much?" A Israeli News Reporter asked

"We have no written records of any Outcast warriors being involved against or with Gene Corp." Paxton replied, "In fact there isn't even records of them from Operation Bodyguard indicating that this is indeed our first encounter with them."

"How does the APM plan to end the conflict?" The CNN News Reporter asked

"Simple, we find and neutralize Alvin the Treacherous. His death will shatter the morale and organization of the Outcasts' invasion force therefore forcing them to withdraw from Berk." Paxton replied shortly before Reaper muted the TV with it's remote and then turning to look at Twones'

"That boy's a natural." Reaper said to Twones, who nodded, "So do you have anything to tell me about Gene Corp's meddling with the Romans?"

"Not yet, we're still trying to recover the rest of the data from what's left of Gene Corp's databases." He replied, "But we're not the only ones to be showing interest in the deals anymore, our friends in Russian Military High Command are dispatching Colonel Gosha Titov and a small Spetsnaz reconnaissance team to Rome."

"Figures, the Russians can't help but to get themselves involved in

our investigations...the Gene Corp War proved that." Reaper said

"What should we do?" Twones asked him

"Nothing except watch and listen, we might be able to learn the extent of Gene Corp's..._diplomacy_ if Titov's men find something in Rome." He replied, Twones nodded before looking at his digital wrist watch

"I need to head back to Washington, I'll notify you if we learn anything." He said to Reaper

"I'll be waiting." He replied before Twones left his office

Author's Notes:

Polkovnik is the Russian Military equivalent rank to Colonel while "General-Polkovnik "(Colonel General) is the equivalent to a four star general

6. Chapter 6

Chapter Six: The Battle of the Long Beach

**The Isle of Berk **

Sometime Later

Stoick was with Karlson as they watched the live feed from the Drone flying over the half of the Outcast Fleet that was sailing North out of Black Heart Bay carrying with it half of the Outcast Army toward The Long Beach where the 1st Legion was already constructing fortifications while Barnes, the rest of the post-human dragons, and the dragon riders with their mounts were helping move produce out from the nearby food stores

"Gods bless this wonderful technology." Stoick said to Karlson, "Are you sure you don't want to send some of my men to help you defend it?"

"Nah, we need somebody to watch the forest just in Alvin tries to attack through there with the rest of his army." He replied, "Plus our reinforcements are only a few minutes away."

"Why aren't you there?" Stoick asked him

"Just in case you need me here." He replied while on the Long Beach, Barnes oversaw the loading of the last container of grain onto a VTOL that took it to the village

"That's the last of it!" Barnes shouted, "Now lets go help the engies finish the defenses!"

"Dad!" Leon cried as he ran toward Barnes

"What is it Leon?" He asked

"I think there's a group of Outcasts on that hill over there spying on the APMSF!" Leon replied as he motioned toward a hill overlooking the Long Beach that Barnes used his armor's built in binoculars to zoom in on

"I don't see anything." Barnes said to him

"They're up there because I saw them." He replied

Barnes nodded and looked back at the rest of the post-human dragons and dragon riders

"Me and Leon are going to check out this hill, you guys go ahead and get to the beach. We'll call you if we need help." Barnes said to them before he and Leon extended their wings and took off while the others headed in the direction of the beach

As Barnes and Leon approached the hill, Barnes finally saw the group of men that Leon was talking about laying in prone positions as they observed the construction of the beach defenses, not noticing Barnes and Leon as they circled overhead

"See I told you!" Leon said to him

"I never said that they weren't up here. But I think those aren't Outcasts." Barnes said as he contacted Karlson over the radio

"What is it Barnes?" Karlson asked him

"We have a group of men on this hill we're flying over watching the beach defenses, are they yours?" Barnes replied

"Let me check...negative, I have no guys on that hill and Stoick is saying he hasn't sent anybody down there." Karlson said to him

"Roger that, we're going down to check them out." He replied as he and Leon started to descend down to the hill, landing behind the men who they immediately realized were not Outcasts, but were instead Blackwater Infiltrators who heard them land and immediately opened fire with their AKs

"NOT THESE GUYS AGAIN!" Barnes shouted as the rounds bounced off his' and Leon's kletonium armor

"Barnes?! What's going on?!" Karlson shouted

"These guys are Blackwater!" Barnes replied as he and Leon pursued the Infiltrators as they fled down the hill

"What?!" Karlson asked

"You heard me correctly and we're in pursuit!" Barnes replied

"Where are they heading?!" Karlson asked

"Somewhere to the Northwest!" Barnes replied, "Wensky, anybody are you hearing this?!"

"Loud and clear! We're coming! Just don't lose them!" Wensky said to

him

"We're not!" Barnes replied

"Dad, I thought you beat these guys already?" Leon asked him

"I thought we did too!" He replied as they took off and continued to pursue the infiltrators in the air where they were joined the by others

"Karlson has sent some guys to see if they can head them off!" Astrid shouted to Barnes, who nodded

"Are you sure these guys are Blackwater?" Samantha asked him

"Yes! I can recognize those %#$ ing uniforms from anywhere!" He replied when up ahead, the Blackwater Infiltrators arrived at their destination on a small beach where a submersible was waiting, but as they started to board the craft, two APMSF gunships arrived and strafed them with their miniguns and hit the submersible with several rockets, damaging it's hull causing it to sink while the post-human dragons arrived and landed as the surviving Blackwater Infiltrators attempted to fight back

"You weren't kidding! These are defiantly Blackwater's guys!" Katie said to Barnes as they easily wiped out the infiltrators capable of fighting leaving a single wounded one that was trying to crawl off the beach and into the forest, who Barnes came after

"Give it up, you're done for." Barnes said as he caught up with the Infiltrator, who he turned and jumped back when he saw that his mouth was foaming after taking a cyanide capsule before dying as Astrid and Stormfly came up

"What in Odin's na-" Astrid said

"Cyanide capsule, they're sometimes given to special forces when their superiors don't want them getting captured." Samantha replied as two APMSF Mallards came down for a landing on the beach along with Karlson, Stoick, and Thornado

"Dammit Barnes, could you at least have captured one of them alive?" Karlson asked him

"I tried to take this one, but he took a cyanide capsule." He replied

"But what in Odin's name were they doing here?! I thought you rounded up the remaining Blackwater infiltrators after the end of the war?" Stoick asked Karlson and Barnes

"We did and most of them are still in prison, dead, but some are still at large." Karlson replied as a nearby APMSF Officer scanned one of the dead Infiltrators with her PDA that went through a database of known Blackwater and Gene Corp personnel still at large

"This guy isn't even coming up!" The Officer shouted to them after the PDA was done

"Get these bodies loaded up onto the Mallard and as soon as the fleet gets here, I want that submersible out of the water!" Karlson replied, "We need to hurry up and get to the Long Beach before the Outcast Fleet gets there."

"You better contact Cape Girardeau, they might know something that we don't know. They always do in my experience." Samantha said to him

Karlson snorted

"I will." He replied, "We'll take care of this, you guys get back to Long Beach and help finish."

Barnes nodded before taking off with the riders and post-human dragons

"Karlson do you know something we don'-" Stoick asked him

"No...I literally have no idea what's going on here Stoick." He replied as he nudged one of the Infiltrators with his claws, "But hopefully I will soon."

Cape Girardeau, MO

**APM Command Bunker **

Reaper was talking to General Smict in the war room when a APMSF Officer came running into the room toward them

"Mr. President! Mr. President!" The Officer shouted

Reaper sighed

"What is it?" He asked the Officer

"General Karlson just informed us that Barnes and the 502nd had just wiped out a group of Blackwater Infiltrators on Berk!" She replied

"What?!" Smict asked

"Are they certain they were Blackwater?" Reaper asked her

She nodded

"Karlson's men are collecting the bodies now for examination, they also didn't appear in Gene Corp's or Blackwater's personeel files." She added

"Contact Twones and tell him I want a field team on Berk as soon as possible. Anything else?" Reaper asked her

"Negative, besides that he thinks you know something about this." She replied

"He doesn't know how right he is." Reaper thought to himself, "Lieutenant, I don't want you speaking a word about this outside of this room."

"Yes sir." The Officer said to him before leaving

"Reaper what in god's name is going on?" Smict asked him

Reaper sighed

"Me and Twones have just recently found out that MacTavish was making deals with the Roman Empire before the outbreak of the Gene Corp War." He said to him

"And you didn't tell Karlson and Barnes or even me or Conrad?!" Smict asked him, "As far as we know those Infiltrators could have been scouts for a larger attack or even been cooperating with the Outcasts!"

"I think we would've noticed by now if the Outcasts were being helped by remnants of Gene Corp and Blackwater." He replied

Smict sighed

"Lets just get the Outcasts done with so we can focus on this new problem." He said to him

"I agree." He replied

**Isle of Berk **

Savage and Mildew were on the lead ship of the Outcast Fleet as it arrived at the Long Beach which was eerily quietly as both Savage and Mildew observed the beach using spyglasses

"Gods dammit, they knew we're coming!" Savage shouted when he saw the American positions overlooking the beaches

"Well too late to turn around now." Mildew replied

"What should we do Savage?" A Outcast asked Savage

"Full speed ahead." He replied while onshore, a APMSF Officer was observing the Outcast fleet with his range finder

"ALL UNITS OPEN FIRE!" The Officer shouted over the radio as the entrenched APMSF units opened fire on the approaching Outcast ships while Barnes led the post-human dragons and 502nd into battle

"That's a lot of ships down there Dice-1! No way we're going to be able to stop all of them from getting to the beach!" Ramirez shouted

"Just take out as many we can!" Barnes replied, "Follow my lead!"

Barnes charged up a Plasma Blast before diving down upon a Outcast ship before releasing the blast and turning the ship into the splinters before lifting back up into the air while Zoey, Anna, and Samantha followed, destroying three more Outcast ships while Leon plasma blasted a fifth one while Ramirez led the F-45s in strafing runs on the Outcast fleets using their pulse cannons and rocket pods while Outcast crossbowmen fired up at them to no effect while the

F-45s were followed by the post-human Zipplebacks who shrouded several ships with their flammable green acid before Vasili detonated it with a lava blast, setting the ships and their occupants ablaze while the post-human Monstrous Nightmares crippled several ships by breaking their masts which were then taken out by the APMSF or the Night Furies while two formations of Mallards armed with torpedoes sank several more Outcast ships as the first ships of the Outcast fleet made landfall, their occupants quickly disembarking including Savage and Mildew and came under immediate small arms fired from the APMSF defensive positions while Outcast dragon riders went to engage the American dragons and flying machines

"We're all going to die here!" A Outcast screamed after taking cover behind some rocks as they were raked by gunfire while several more Outcast ships made landfall and deposited more warriors who rushed ashore, only to be cut down by gunfire while Savage realized that Mildew wasn't with him anymore

"Where did the old geezer go?!" Savage asked as he looked around before seeing Mildew on the beach behind him laying face down in the sand in a growing puddle of blood

"Well there goes our guide!" Another Outcast shouted, "Now what?!"

"We get off this forsaken strip of sand!" Savage replied, "CHARGE!"

Savage and his men charged out from behind the protective cover of the rocks only to be shattered by a barrage of high explosive shells that sent Savage flying through the air, landing in the sand unconscious while in the forest, Alvin was leading a second attack on the Hairy Hooligan Village when there was a bright flash of green light in the sky

"What in Thor's name!" Alvin shouted as he shielded his eyes with his arm until the flash dissipated revealing a massive flying warship hovering over the island

"Dear gods! They have flying ships!" A Outcast screamed as he and several other Outcasts started to flee

"Get back here you cowards!" Alvin shouted when there was another blinding bright flash of green light in the sky which revealed yet another flying warship after it had dissipated causing even more panic amongst the ranks of the Outcast

"Alvin! We need to get out of here!" A Outcast shouted

Alvin sighed

"Order a retreat!" He shouted before two Outcasts blew a horn signaling to the rest of the army to retreat back to the camp along with the remaining Outcast dragon riders while in the village, Karlson and Stoick were leading the defense of the village when the USAS Cape Girardeau followed by the USAS St. Louis transitioned in over the village

"There they are!" Karlson shouted as the Outcast Army started to retreat back to their camp

"They're running!" Spitelout shouted, "Can we go after them now so we can finish this once and for all?"

Stoick looked at Karlson

"I'm not stopping you." He said to him with his translation collar

"Lets finish this!" Stoick shouted as he and Thornado led the Hairy Hooligan counter-attack against the Outcasts while Karlson stayed behind as Barnes, Samantha, the other post-human dragons, and the dragon riders returned

"Done already?!" He asked them

"The APMSF is doing the mop up work." Barnes replied

"Well Stoick and his guys are going after the Outcasts, feel free to join them I have to stay here and direct the landing operations." Karlson said to him

Barnes nodded before he and the other post-human dragons took off into the air and flew off after Stoick and his men while Karlson looked overhead as the first wave of VTOLs disembarked from the airships while Alvin and the remains of his armies arrived at their camp to find it in flames as a fleet of armored warships that were anchored offshore bombarded it while the remains of the Outcast fleet burned in Blackheart Bay

"Dear gods! We're trapped!" An Outcast shouted

"We can't do anything about it now!" Alvin replied

"This is all your fault Alvin!" Another Outcast shouted and several others shouted in agreement while Alvin tightened his grip around his axe, but before he or the Outcasts could do anything, they were strafed by a flying machine that forced them to flee back into the forest toward the advancing Hairy Hooligans who were now being supported by the American armored dragons leaving the Outcasts trapped

Mediterranean Sea â€“ Viking Verse

Somewhere off the shores of the Italian Peninsula

**Sometime Later **

Colonel Titov was standing on top of conning tower of the nuclear submarine that was carrying him and his small task force as he and the captain used their binoculars to scan the surrounding sea for Roman vessels

"So when do you want to set sail for Rome?" The Captain asked him

"Nightfall so we can use the darkness to cover our approach." He replied

The Captain nodded

"What are you expecting to fine?" He asked him

"Hopefully nothing worth starting a war over." Titov replied, "Do those cruise missile launchers work."

"Da." The Captain said to him, "If you ever need anything to get blasted to pieces, we'll have them waiting."

"Don't you need authorization to use those weapons?" He asked him

"Only if they have nuclear warheads, but we have enough firepower on this sub to take out half the city of Rome." He replied

"Hopefully that won't be necessary." Titov said to him, "Now lets get out of here and find somewhere safe to stay until nightfall."

The Captain nodded before he and Titov went below deck, closing the hatch behind them so the vessel could submerge beneath the waves

7. Chapter 7

Chapter Seven: The Real Enemy â€“ A Unexpected Development

**Isle of Berk â€“ USMC Beachhead **

**Four Hours after arrival of American Reinforcements **

Inside the passenger compartment of an American Amphibious Assault Vehicle two squads of U.S Marines were preparing themselves for battle

"So what's the story behind the big guy?" Asked Private First Class Roderick Hernandez, the newest member of Bravo Squad led by Sergeant Jayden Henderson to Corporal Phillip Turner as he looked at Sergeant Henderson who was sitting in the far back of the transport with the platoon commander as he read a small book about the armored fighting vehicles of World War I

"You've never heard of Henderson?" Phillip asked him

"No...should I have?" He replied

"Oh yeah I forgot, you're new. He's the son of Former General Martin Henderson, you know the one who keeps on criticizing the PP in Europe?" Phillip said to him

"Oh yeah...I never knew he had a son." He replied

"Most people don't and for good reason, Henderson hates his old man." Phillip said to him, "Rumor has it that he actually helped the APMSF try to capture him before he fled to Europe."

"And I thought I didn't get along with my dad..." The Private said as he looked back at Henderson, who was now putting the book he was reading into his ruck while looking at his wristwatch

"Time to lock and load marines!" The Platoon Commander shouted as the AAV made landfall before opening the back door allowing the Marines to exit the transport with Henderson being the last one to leave, "Henderson!"

Henderson ran over to the platoon commander

"What is it sir?" Henderson asked him

"I want you and your squad to go ahead and head inland to try to link up with the Hairy Hooligans or the APMSF 1st Legion." He replied

"But wouldn't that require us to go through enemy territory Staff Sergeant?" Henderson asked him

"Yes, you're squad is some of the best men in the unit which is why I'm sending you." He replied, "And I also understand this isn't your first encounter with the Vikings...or the 1st Legion."

Henderson nodded

"I was with the Vikings at Salt River Canyon during the Gene Corp War and I rather not talk about my...previous cooperation with the 1st Legion." He said to him

"I understand." The Platoon Commander replied, "Head out as soon as you're ready."

Henderson saluted the Platoon Commander before rejoining his squad

"The Staff Sergeant wants us to advance in front of the main unit and attempt to link up with the 1st Legion and Hairy Hooligans advancing through the forest from the east." He said to his squad, "Which means we will be cutting through enemy territory, so I want weapons loaded and cool nerves, am I making myself clear?"

"Sir yes sir!" His Squad replied

"Good, we move out immediately." He said to them

**USAS Patton **

Hiccup and Toothless were with Tesla, Calvin, and Sheva in the hangar bay when the post-human dragons and the rest of the dragon riders flew in and landed, all of them tired and exhausted

"What are you guys doing here?" Hiccup asked Barnes

"Conrad told us to take a break." He replied

"I can see why..." Tesla said as Calvin and Sheva ran to their father as he came toward Tesla

"Hey you two..." He said to them while Toothless limped his way over to Barnes

"You look horrible." Toothless said to him telepathically

Barnes snorted

"You're not the one who's been up for several hours straight flying around and blowing shit up." He said to him

"Come on Barnes, lets get this armor off so we can get some sleep." Samantha said to him as she helped Leon remove his armor

"Just a minute..." Barnes said to her

"We heard about your run in with those Blackwater Infiltrators, any word why they were here?" Hiccup asked him

"Not yet, but Twones has sent a field team to check out the bodies and the remains of their submersible." He replied before he turned around and went over to Samantha

"I've never seen him this exhausted before..." Hiccup said as Astrid and Stormfly came over toward him and Toothless

"You be exhausted as well if you had been out there...the Outcasts don't know when to give up." Astrid said to them

"I've heard..." Hiccup replied, "So do you really think those were Blackwater Infiltrators?"

"If they weren't, they were pretty convincing." She said to them, "Really spooked out Barnes that was for sure."

Meanwhile in the Infirmary, General Conrad entered the room with his two bodyguards as a APM Intelligence Officer searched the bodies of the Blackwater Infiltrators

"What do you have to report?" Conrad asked the Intelligence Officer

"They're defiantly Blackwater, that's for sure. Uniforms match and everything." She replied, "But this is something that I found on them."

The Intelligence Officer lifted up a evidence bag containing a large knife with a black wooden handle

"It's a knife...what's so interesting about it?" Conrad asked her

"It's a Bowie Knife, but what's more interesting is the symbol on the handle because the last time I checked Bowie Knives didn't exist during the time of the Roman Empire...or for that matter stainless steel." She replied, "Their AKs have the same symbols as well."

"Are you certain isn't just a symbol they put on there for decoration?" Conrad asked

"I can't be for certain, I sent a picture of it to the CIA Field Team that's on it's way here so they can analysis it." She replied

"How old is our latest intel on the Roman Empire in this dimension?" Conrad asked

"The end of Operation Bodyguard, 134 years ago." She replied

"Then I guess it's time we update it, if we have any long range drones available I want them over Rome as soon as possible." He said to her

The Intelligence Officer nodded

"Anything else?" Conrad asked

"No, but I'll notify you once I find anything." She replied

Conrad nodded and left the Infirmary

**Isle of Berk **

Savage regained consciousness as he was being dragged by two American soldiers through the Hairy Hooligan village in chains

"Man this guy is heavy!" One of the Americans said

"Better get ready, because it's about to get worse." The Other replied as Savage started to struggle as he tried to break free, "You can try all you want big guy, there is no way you're getting out of this!"

"Make me!" Savage replied

"Okay then!" The Other Soldier said as he pulled out his weapon and whipped Savage in the back of the head with it, knocking him unconscious again before they continued to drag him toward a Mallard that several other Outcast Prisoners were being loaded onto in chains by APMSF Stormtroopers

"We have a major one here, Stoick's confirmed that this one is Alvin's second-in-command." One of the Soldiers said to the APMSF Officer who was leading the Stormtroopers loading the captured Outcasts onto the VTOLs

"Hmm...we might use for this one then, get him aboard." The Officer said to them before they continued to drag Savage into the the Mallard's cargo bay before dropping him on the floor and leaving while in the forest, Henderson and the rest of Bravo Squad was continuing on their way through the forest to link with the 1st Legion and Hairy Hooligans while the sounds of battle echoed from all around them

"With all that gunfire, I'm surprised we haven't ran into anybody yet." Said Corporal Jasmine Morrison, the Corpsman attached to Bravo Squad

"Same here." Replied Lance Corporal Dean Oliver

"Our mission is to link up with the APMSF and Vikings, not kill Outcasts." Henderson said to them

"Aren't the Outcasts technically Vikings?" Phillip asked

"Well yes...but you know what I meant." Henderson replied when he noticed that his motion sensor was starting to detect movement before

he held up his fist, signaling to the rest of the squad to stop

"What is it sir?" Hernandez asked him over the radio

"We got movement to our front." He replied quietly

Henderson and the rest of squad readied their weapons when they heard heavily accented voices coming from the foliage in front of them

"Does anybody have a visual?" Henderson asked

"Negative, the foliage is too thick." Dean replied while Bravo Squad's Marksman, Corporal Benjamin Smith used the thermal scope mounted on top of his DMR

"I do...they're Vikings, but I can't tell if they're Outcast or not." He said as he motioned for Hernandez to take point as the squad slowly crept through the foliage toward the Vikings trying to get a ID on them, but before they could get into position Henderson's motion sensor detected several more Vikings who surrounded them and pointed the weapons at them while Bravo Squad immediately pointed their weapons back at them before Henderson recognized them

"Lower your damn weapons! They're Hairy Hooligans!" Henderson shouted as the Vikings lowered their weapons

"Sorry for the scare, we thought you were Outcasts!" A Viking wearing a helmet with four horns and fat blonde beard said to Bravo Squad

"Same here." Henderson replied

"Hey you look familiar have we met before?" The Viking asked him

"Depends were you at Salt River Canyon?" He replied

The Viking nodded

"Aw yes now I remember you, you're that Henderson person that helped bring Bucket back to us!" He said to him

"That would be me." He replied

"Name's Mulch by the way." Mulch said to him

"Yeah Bucket mentioned you when I found him." He replied, "Strange fellow he is."

"Well that's what happens with you have your skull fractured, but he doesn't wear the bucket anymore thanks to the work of your doctors." Mulch said to him

"Good to hear." Henderson replied, "So are you alone out here?"

"Stoick sent us ahead of the main force to link up with you."Mulch said to him, "But I'm guess your leader sent you to link up with

us."

"Guess so." He replied as he and Bravo got up, "But I'm sure the others aren't that far behind."

"I hope so because this place is crawling with Outcasts!" Mulch said to him

"It is? Because you guys are the first faces we've se-" He replied before Dean took a hit from a Outcast crossbow

"Ambush!" Mulch shouted as Outcast Warriors charged at Bravo Squad and his men while Jasmine ran to Dean, who pulled the metal bolt out from his bullet-proof vest

"I'm fine!" Dean shouted to her as he got back up and picked up his rifle

"Form a circle!" Henderson shouted as he gunned a Outcast with his rifle while activating his comm link, "This is Sergeant Henderson, we are under attack by multiple hostiles and require immediate assistance!"

"We copy you sergeant! We can hear the gunfire from here!" The Platoon Commander replied, "Just hold on! We're on our way!"

"Roger!" Henderson said as he deactivated comm link, "Hold them off! Help is on the way!"

"Kill them all!" One of the Outcasts shouted while Benjamin picked them off with his DMR

"Henderson we're surrounded!" Phillip shouted to Henderson

"I can see that Corporal!" He replied

"I swear why is it always us that get stuck in situations like this?!" Dean shouted

"Because we're always the ones on point!" Jasmine replied

"Fire in the hole!" Hernandez shouted as he fired the grenade launcher mounted beneath the barrel of his rifle, taking out a group of Outcasts

"Good shot Private!" Henderson replied as several AAVs and LAVs supported by more Marines came crashing through the trees and began firing their automatic grenade launchers and auto cannons, quickly gunning down most of the attacking Outcasts while the others fled into the forest

"I almost thought they had us there!" Mulch said to Henderson

"Didn't even come close." He replied as they approached by the Platoon Leader

"See you managed to complete objective!" He said to them, "Where's the others?"

"Somewhere behind us with the APMSF." Mulch replied

"Good, Henderson I want you to make sure our friends make it back in one piece while we finish cleaning up here." The Platoon Leader said to him

Henderson nodded

"Lead the way Mulch, you know this forest better than we do." He said to Mulch, who nodded and led him and his squad into the forest

**Somewhere in the Mediterranean Sea **

**That Night **

The Russian nuclear sub carrying Titov and his men was now sailing southward, submerged beneath the surface as the Spetsnaz Colonel and his men prepared two Zodiacs for deployment in the Torpedo room

"This one looks good!" Titov said after helping finish inflating the first zodiac, "What about you guys?"

"Still working on it sir." One of the Spetsnaz Operatives working on the other Zodiac replied when the PA system came on

"Colonel Titov please report to bridge, Colonel Titov please report to the bridge." A Russian Sailor said over the intercom

Titov sighed

"You guys finish up here, I'm going to go see what's going on." He said before leaving the Torpedo Room and making his way through the cramped corridors of the submarine to it's command bridge where the captain was looking through the periscope, his face in a expression of shock as he took his eyes off the periscope

"Colonel you better come look at this." He said to Titov as he stepped away from the periscope as Titov came up and took control of it, allowing him to see the Roman port city of Ostia where several there several iron clad warships in dock with smokestacks for multiple factories visible against the horizon

"Captain, I think it's time we break radio silence." He replied

8. Chapter 8

Chapter Eight: The Real Enemy â€“ Intentions Revealed

**Off the Shores of Rome **

**Russian Nuclear Submarine **

Titov was inside the Captain Quarter's with the Captain as he talked to Travkin over the radio

"I'm not hallucinating General, the Romans have industrialized and

they have %$#$ing battleships!" Titov said to him

"Are you for certain that they're Roman?" Travkin asked him

"They were flying under the Roman banner, so I guess so." He replied, "Something tells me this has to do with those deals that Gene Corp did with the Romans!"

"I'll take this up with the big guys in Moscow and see what they have to say, but in the meantime proceed with your mission, we need to know how extensive this industrialization is." Travkin said to him

"Yes sir, should we notify the Americans?" He asked him

"Not yet...but they already suspect something is going on because the 502nd ran into a group of Blackwater Infiltrators on Berk about six hours ago." He replied

"Infiltrators?!" Titov asked

"Yes and armed with Bowie Knifes with Roman symbols on them, which is why General Conrad has dispatched a UAV to Rome which will be there in a hour or so." Travkin replied

"Sir, you know good as well that the Americans will bomb Rome to oblivion once they find out!" Titov said to him

"Which is another reason why you need to hurry Polkovnik." He replied, "Travkin out."

"So what's the plan?" The Captain asked Titov after he put the radio down

"We're to precede with the operation." He replied

The Captain sighed

"I really don't like this Titov...I really don't." He said to him

"I don't either, but Travkin's right we need to know more about this." He replied, "And I also want to get a closer look at those factories to see what they're making."

**Cape Girardeau, MO **

**Common Pleas Courthouse **

Reaper was in his office looking at the pictures of the Bowie Knifes taken from the dead Blackwater Infiltrators when Twones entered his office

"Is that one of the Bowie knives they recovered?" Twones asked Reaper, who nodded and handed the picture to him so he could look at it, "It almost looks authentic, you only come across one these things in private collections or museums nowadays."

"I know...because I have several, most of them not in any condition to be used in combat." He replied

"How did these Infiltrators get a hold of them?" Twones asked him

"No clue, but the main question is why they were on Berk." He replied, "If I didn't know any better I would say they were scouts."

"Scouts for what though?" Twones asked him

"Don't know...have we heard anything about our Russian friends?" He replied

"That's why am I here Reaper." Twones said to him, "Titov is reporting that the Romans had industrialized and have steam-powered warships."

"Industrialized?" He asked him

"I'm afraid so." He replied

"Well that may explain why those knives had Roman markings on them." Reaper said to him, "I guess this solves the mystery behind Gene Corp's deals with the Romans."

"Not quite I'm afraid, we still need to find out what the Romans gave to Gene Corp in return." He replied, "Good news is that Conrad has dispatched a UAV to Rome so we're about to see a bigger picture of what's going on here."

The Roman Shores

Titov helped some of his men pull one of the Zodiacs ashore before hiding it in some bushes while the others hid the other Zodiac

"Everybody on me!" Titov said to the others on his comm link as he motioned for them to come to him, "I want to remind everybody that this is a still a recon mission and we're not at war..._yet_, so we're not going to go in there weapons blazing!"

"Yes sir." The Other Spetsnaz Operatives replied

"Good." Titov said to them, "We're going to start by checking out those factories first because if there is any Blackwater or Gene Corp guys here, they'll probably be in that general area."

"Which also means it'll probably be heavily guarded as well." One of the Operatives said to him

Titov nodded

"We also need to be careful, this is still technically a civilian area, so if we do get into a firefight, watch your fire." He said to them, "Lets move out!"

Titov and his men headed inland toward Ostia before coming across the wall surrounded the city with the only visible entrance being protected by a checkpoint manned by two guards, Roman Soldiers wearing WWI-style uniforms armed with bolt-action rifles that were slung over their shoulders

"So much for muskets." Titov said to himself as he used his rangefinder to get a closer look at the Roman Soldiers as they checked the papers of a traveler before letting him into Ostia

"How are we going to get past that checkpoint?" One of Titov's men asked him

Titov looked at the wall which had barbed wire on top of it to prevent people from trying to climb over it before he noticed a hole at the bottom of one of it's sections

"There." He said to them as he pointed toward the howl

"Looks like a pretty tight squeeze sir." One of them replied

"We can manage." He said, "Follow me."

Titov led his men to the hole

"I'll go first to see if it's safe." He said before he started to crawl through the hole, coming out on the other behind several piles of hay before he signaled for the others to start coming through, "So far so good, lets move on."

Titov and his men continued on through the city using the alleyways and evading Roman patrols until finally reaching the factories which were surrounded by a electrified perimeter fence with a guard tower on each corner while workers loaded freight trains with crates of ammunition while recently finished Mark V and Renault FT-17 tanks were also loaded by large cranes straight out of the factory while others were being loaded with various types of field guns,armored cars, and biplanes while a Roman General walked alongside a man wearing a dark green suit with a yellow tie guarded by two Blackwater Mercenaries as they talked to each other that Titov used his rangefinder to listen to

"Why do you insist we go after the Vikings of the Barbaric Archipelago when we have as you say, larger fish to fry?" The Roman General asked the Suited Man

"Because the Vikings have made friends with some extremely large fish General as reported by our scouts before we...lost contact with them." He replied

"I see..." The General said, "But with these new weapons you've been providing us, the Vikings will be easy prey, even with their dragons!"

The man smiled

"I appreciate your optimism for our designs on the Vikings." He said to the Roman, "But you should be more worried about their Allies, one of which have have a small, but strong presence on the Isle of Berk. Which reminds me how long will it be until General Atticus launches his first attack?"

"Soon." The General replied as Titov lowered his rangefinder and shook his head

"What is it Colonel?" One of Titov's Men asked him

"They're going to invade the Barbaric Archipelago." He replied

"When?" The Spetsnaz Operative asked

"Tonight...okay this mission is over, we're getting out of here." Titov replied as he contacted the Captain of the submarine

"Captain, we have a problem." He said to him

"How bad?" He replied

"The Romans are in it together with Gene Corp and Blackwater and they're about to hit the Americans and Vikings!" Titov said to him

"Dear god...I'm contacting High Command right now!" He replied, "Can you tell me anything else?"

"Yes, how big of a boom do those missiles of your's make?" Titov asked him

"Enough to turn that turn that entire city into smoldering ruins, we'll starting preparing them for launch now. Any targets you want to pick out?" He replied

"Anything that hurts!" Titov said to him, "Titov out!"

Titov and his men quickly left their position while inside the industrial complex, the self-proclaimed new CEO of Gene Corp, Cameron Yates was talking to Roman General Aulus Crassus who commanded the Roman Armies on the Roman Peninsula

"So General why hasn't the Empire attacked the Archipelago before now?" Yates asked Crassus

"After the last war we had with the Vikings we signed a treaty with them agreeing that we would never attack them as long as they our settlements in Britannia alone." He replied

"Is that so?" Yates asked him, "Have they upheld their part of the bargain?"

"So far...plus to tell you the truth there is nothing on those islands the Empire doesn't already have in abundance. Which is why the emperor has been questioning your logic to go after it and the Vikings." He replied

"Because their allies pose a very serious threat to us." Yates said to him

"Then why haven't we gone after them earlier?" He asked

"Because we didn't realize it until...recently." Yates replied

"I see." Aulus said to him, "Well I guess we could use the Archipelago as a base to colonize the lands across the Atlantic you keep talking about."

"See you do have a reason to conquer the Archipelago." He replied before a missile came screaming down from the heavens and crashed into one of the factories before exploding, destroying the entire building and severely damaging the surrounding structures while throwing Yates and Aulus over their feet as another missile came down and struck one of the other factories, also leveling it while other missiles exploded inside the surrounding city

"What in Jupiter's name?!" Aulus shouted as he and Yates took cover under a boxcar until the explosions ceased before they came out as a Blackwater Officer came running to Yates

"Where the hell did those come from?!" He yelled to the Officer

"We don't know sir, but they looked like SLBMs!" He replied before Yates looked over to Aulus, who was wiping debris off his uniform

"I guess those were the allies of the Vikings?" He asked him

"I'm afraid so..." He replied, "Looks like our plans have been compromised...tell General Atticus to launch his invasion has soon as possible!"

Aulus nodded before running off while Yates turned to the Blackwater Officer

"Jam all communications, I don't want that sub sending out a warning!" He shouted to him

**Offshore **

**A Few Minutes Later **

Titov and his men arrived back at the submarine on their Zodiacs while Ostia burned behind them

"So much for this being a reconnaissance mission." One of Titov's Men said

"I just hope we get the warning out in time." Titov replied as they were greeted by the Captain

"I'm afraid we have a problem...our communications are being jammed, we can't get anything out." He said to them

"What?!" Titov asked, "We need to warn the Americans!"

"We are, we just need to get out of the radius of whatever is jamming." The Captain replied

"That's going to take too damn long!" Titov said to him

**Cape Girardeau, MO **

**Common Pleas Courthouse **

Twones was on the phone while Reaper continued to study the picture of the Bowie Knife

"The Russians just lost contact with both Titov and their sub." Twones said to Reaper

"What?" He replied

"They don't know, but they haven't been able to reach them." Twones said

"Sounds like they're being jammed." Reaper said

Twones shrugged

"I guess we'll have to wait until that drone that Conrad sent gets to Rome." He said to Reaper

"

9. Chapter 9

Chapter Nine: Invasion

**Isle of Berk **

**Sometime Later **

Henderson and his squad were once again in the forest with the rest of their platoon that was closing in on a isolated Outcast position with the support of APM Pershing II and Enforcer tanks

"This is too easy!" Benjamin said as he picked off Outcasts with his DMR from behind the turret of one of the Pershing IIs, "I thought these guys were supposed to have dragons? Because if they do, we're not seeing them!"

"The flyboys probably already took care of most of them before we landed." Jasmine replied before a nearby Pershing II disappeared into a sinkhole that opened up beneath it

"What the *$#%?!" Hernandez shouted as Benjamin jumped off the tank as it came to a halt

"Intel said nothing about sinkholes!" An APM Tank Commander shouted over the radio, "One of you jarheads go check it out! We'll cover you!"

"Turner! Hernandez! Go check out that sinkhole!" Henderson shouted

"Yes sir!" Turner replied as he and Hernandez ran toward the sinkhole while another squad of Marines did the same before looking down into, seeing the Pershing II on the floor of the sinkhole while it's crew looked up at them

"You guys alright?" One of the Marines from the other squad asked them

"Yeah I think so?" The Tank Commander replied as he looked to his left and right, "This isn't a sinkhole! Something dug it out because there's a tunnel down here!"

"Sergeant you better get over here!" Hernandez shouted before Henderson ran over to them

"What is it?" He asked them

"They're saying that something dug this hole sir." He replied before the ground started to shake as several more of the tanks disappeared as more sinkholes opened up

"Shit I know what it is! It's a god damn WHISPERING DEATH!" A APM Tank Commander screamed before the large snake-like dragon popped it head's from the ground and blasted at one of the Pershing IIs with fire before disappearing back into the ground

"YOU JUST HAD TO OPEN YOU BIG MOUTH BENJAMIN!" Jasmine shouted to Benjamin while another Enforcer tank disappeared into a sinkhole before the Whispering Death appeared, this time behind Bravo where it tried to blast Henderson, Turner, and Hernandez with its fire as they dove out of the way, Hernandez accidentally falling into the sinkhole with the APM Tank Crew

"This thing is really starting to PISS ME OFF!" Turner shouted as the dragon popped it's head out again and this time shooting out several spines at another squad of Marines, hitting several on them

"Where the hell is the 502nd?! Aren't they supposed to be dragon busters?!" A APM Tank Commander shouted while the Outcasts came charging at them while the Whispering Death appeared again and blasted a squad of Marines with its fire

"Counter-attack!" The USMC Platoon Commander shouted

"Aw %$%! Bravo mount bayonets, this is going to get close and personal!" Henderson shouted to his men

"I can't believe this!" Turner said as he pulled out his bayonet and mounted it beneath his rifle barrel while Alvin the Treacherous led the Outcasts into the battle against the Americans

"I want some of these Americans alive!" Alvin shouted to his men as several more of the American tanks disappeared into sinkholes being dug out by Gravedigger while the remaining ones started to move in reverse leaving the American infantry behind, "Thank the gods for that dragon."

"GIVE THEM HELL MARINES!" One of the American Infantrymen shouted as they fired their weapons at the charging Outcasts while on the American side, Henderson Benjamin helped Hernandez out of the sinkhole while the rest of Bravo helped the rest of the Platoon hold off the Outcasts as they came closer

"Jasmine give me a sit-rep!" Henderson shouted to Jasmine as he, Benjamin, and Hernandez joined the others

"FUBAR!" She replied

"*%$% metal heads left us to rot!" Turner shouted

"Can it!" Henderson replied as the Outcasts reached the Marines while

somewhere in the air, the 502nd and dragon riders were patrolling the airspace over the forest looking for Outcasts

"What's going on down there?!" Astrid shouted as she pointed toward a massive battle between a platoon of U.S Marines and the Outcasts while several APM Tanks retreated from Gravedigger

"It's that damn Whispering Death again!" Barnes shouted

"Thought you took care of that thing already?!" Samantha asked him

"I did, apparently it didn't take a hint." He replied, "Okay, here's what we're going to do! Ramirez, I want you to take the F-45s and the dragon riders to go help those Marines! The rest of us will go after the oversized worm!"

"Roger that." Ramirez said as the F-45s and dragon riders broke off from the group while Barnes led the others down to fight Gravedigger as he sunk another Enforcer Tank with a sinkhole

"I guess the plan is to get it out on the surface?" Wensky asked Barnes over the radio

"Yeah." He replied as they landed as Gravedigger blasted at a Pershing II with his fire before detecting the landing post-human dragons by the vibrations in the ground and then receding back into the ground

"Where it'd go?!" Vasili asked

"Watch your motion sensors!" Barnes replied

"He's right behind us!" Anna shouted before Gravedigger popped out of the ground behind the group and tried to blast the post-human dragons with his fire

"Watch out!" Vasili shouted as they post-human dragons dodged the fire blast before Barnes tackled Gravedigger as he tried to burrow back into the ground and started to wrestle on the ground and was joined by Samantha, Zoey, Anna, and Leon before they were thrown by Gravedigger, who now realized he was outnumbered as he burrowed into the ground

"He's heading toward the Marines!" Vasili shouted while Bravo Squad and the other Marines fought against the Outcasts with the help of the dragon riders and 502nd as Henderson strangled a Outcast with his rifle before he was pulled off him by Alvin

"You Americans certainly have the brains, but when it comes to brawn you're just like worms!" Alvin said to Henderson, who threw him to the ground causing the Sergeant to drop his rifle that went into a sinkhole

"Dammit!" Henderson said after landing on the ground while Alvin moved toward him before grabbing the Sergeant by his neck and lifting him off his feet again

"But luckily for you I'm in a prisoner taking mood." Alvin said to Henderson, who pulled out a smoke grenade from his belt before

hitting Alvin as hard as he could in the face with it causing the Outcast to drop him to the ground and giving him enough time to crawl away and pull out his sidearm that he pointed at Alvin as he wiped blood from the side of his mouth while Bravo Squad surrounded him

"Put your hands in the air where we can see them!" Henderson shouted as the rest of the Outcasts froze as their leader was seemingly being held hostage by the Sergeant and his squad mates before Alvin disappeared into a sinkhole that opened up beneath him and then came back up riding on Gravedigger

"Oh shit..." Turner said

"Get him!" Alvin shouted to Gravedigger, who then shot down at Henderson at his mouth open as the sergeant fired his handgun at the dragon, but at the last minute was lifted up off the ground by a post-human Monstrous Nightmare

"You can thank me later!" Karlson shouted to Henderson with his translation collar while Gravedigger's was grabbed by Gaulle, who pulled the Whispering Death of the ground before pinning it to the ground with his claws while Alvin was thrown off by the dragon's squirming and landed on the ground where he was quickly surrounded by Bravo Squad while the other Outcasts fled

"COWARDS!" Alvin shouted before Jasmine slammed his face into the ground with her boot while Turner placed plastic handcuffs around his wrists

"It's over Alvin!" Astrid said to him

"We'll take it from here lady." Jasmine replied while Karlson dropped Henderson nearby

"No Jasmine, it'll be them taking it from here, he's their responsibility now." He said to Jasmine as she and Turner lifted Alvin off the ground

"You're saying that even after he tried to kill you?" Turned asked him

"The world's not perfect..." He replied as the Platoon Commander approached him

"Nice work you guys! Saved the entire platoon and caught the Outcast we looking for and his dragon!" He said to them before looking and Henderson, "Sergeant, I want you to go with the 502nd and help escort the detainees to the village."

"That won't be necessary staff sergeant, we're well capable of handling him ourselv-" Barnes said with his translation before he was cut short by a biplane flying over

"What the *$#$?" Henderson asked as the biplane came back and strafed them with machine guns making the Marines and dragon riders scatter to cover while the rounds that hit the post-human dragons ricocheted or bounced off their armor while several hit Gravedigger, killing him

"Gravedigger!" Alvin shouted before Jasmine forced his head back down as the plane flew over as Barnes took off after it

"Get him to the village; don't let him out of your sights!" The USMC Platoon Commander shouted to Henderson, Bravo, and the dragon riders while more biplanes flew over

"Yes sir!" Henderson replied while back in the village, Stoick and Sergeant Adah were taking cover beneath a U.S Army Truck as biplanes with Roman markings strafed and bomb the village while also trying to dog-fight with American jet fighters, usually losing them due to the jets' superior speed or bouncing off their metal armor while the jets had no problem blasting them out of the night sky

"Those are seaplanes!" Adah said as he saw the floatation devices attached to the bottom of the fuselage of one of the biplanes that flew overhead, "They've got to have a fleet nearby!"

"A fleet?!" Stoick asked him

"You didn't hear me wrong Stoick, this is just the beginning!" He replied as Barnes flew overhead after one of the biplanes before blasting it to pieces with a plasma blast as a U.S air defense vehicle passed by firing its vulcan cannon and firing SAMs

"Come on! We need to get out of here!" Stoick shouted as he crawled out from under the truck followed by Adah and headed to the Great Hall

**USAS Patton **

Hiccup was sitting against Toothless as he sketched Calvin and Sheva sleeping together next to their mother when alarms started to blare

"GENERAL QUARTERS! GENERAL QUARTERS! ALL PERSONEEL MAN YOUR BATTLESTATIONS! THIS IS NOT A DRILL! WE ARE UNDER ATTACK!" A APM Officer screamed over the PA System before the airship shook as something exploded outside

"Mom what's going?!" Calvin asked Tesla before a Mallard VTOL with a burning right engine came into the hangar before crashing and sliding across the hangar floor right toward Hiccup and Toothless, with the latter grabbing Hiccup by the collar with his mouth and jumping out of the way as the VTOL crashed into the wall and started to burn as the pilot and co-pilot climbed out of the cockpit as water sprinklers kicked into action as aircraft maintenance crew armed themselves with fire hoses before rushing to contain the flames while the APMSF Officer rushed into the hangar toward Tesla

"Okay buddy, I think it's time we get out there again!" Hiccup said to Toothless, who nodded

"Ma'am, you need to get your children out of here!" The APMSF Officer shouted to Tesla before the airship shook again as it was struck again while a formation of biplanes flew past the hangar, their gunners firing their machine guns into the hangar as they past

"Take them!" Tesla said to the Officer with her translation collar, "Where's my armor?!"

"Cargo bay!" He replied before Tesla ran off while Hiccup mounted onto Toothless and took off

"You going to be okay?" Hiccup asked Toothless, who nodded as they went after the biplanes as they dodged the rounds being fired from their rear gunners while the Patton's APMSF F-45 escorts chased after them gunning them all down before Hiccup and Toothless could do anything

"Let's get back to the village!" Toothless replied telepathically

**Isle of Berk **

Barnes plasma blasted another biplane that disintegrated into burning debris right in front of him while Ramirez's used the right wing of his F-45 to the tail off another biplane

"I've always wanted to try that!" Ramirez shouted as the biplane spiral out of the control before crashing into the ground

"Barnes!" Hiccup shouted to Barnes as he and Toothless caught up to him

"What are you guys doing here?!" Barnes asked him his translation collar

"Thought you could use our help!" Hiccup replied

Barnes sighed

"You couldn't be more right, we're stretched thin!" He said to him with his translation collar

"We've got incoming helicopters with Blackwater markings to the East of the village!" Pentrov shouted over the radio, "Something tells me this isn't a coincidence!"

"Roger that! We're on our way!" Barnes shouted

"That isn't all! We've got warships over here as well!" Karlson shouted

"Warships?! What kind?" Conrad asked over the radio

"How can I tell?! I'm not in the navy!" Karlson replied, "But it looks we may have troopships and barges!"

"An invasion force..." Hiccup said quietly

"Where are you Karlson?" Conrad asked Karlson

"Just north of Death's Head Headland! It looks like they're heading south toward the Long Beach and we have other ships and more biplanes and helos heading for the Meathead Islands!" He replied, "We're going to need some bigger guns down here general!"

"Let the Navy and the Naval Corps worry about those warships, you just focus on taking as many of those helicopters and biplanes you

can!" Conrad shouted to him, "Barnes, I want you and whoever's with you to focus on clearing out the skies over the village and our beachheads in Black Heart Bay before they do too much damage!"

"We're already on it!" Barnes replied

"Karlson do you still have men on the Long Bay?" Conrad asked Karlson

"Yes, but only enough to slow these guys down!" He replied, "How the hell did we not detect this?!"

"That's exactly what I was about to ask!" Barnes replied

"I knew that I would have already told you!" Conrad said to them, "But we'll worry about that later, we have bigger worries and so does the rest of the Archipelago!"

**Berserker Home Islands **

36**th**** Bundeswehr Armored Division **

Unbeknownst to the American forces on Berk, the European Defense Ministry had deployed two divisions to the Berserker Islands in response to their deployment on Berk to protect their interests in the case that the war expanded and they were now as well facing the same problems as Major General Aberly Dreher, commander of the 36th Bundeswehr Armored Division climbed into his Leopard VIII MBT through the cupola hatch with the rest of its three man crew as they were strafed by biplanes

"Close the damn hatches and start the engine! Schnell!" Aberly shouted to his crew over the internal comm link of the tank as he activated the cupola-mounted machine gun and fired it up at the attacking biplanes while the driver started up the engine that roared to life as the autoloader shoved a armor-piercing round into the breech of the 120mm main gun and closed as the driver activated the targeting computer as the tank surged forward as it's camouflage netting collapsed and fell off

"Aberly! Where are you?! What in Odin's name is going on?!" Shouted Dagnur the Deranged over Aberly's comm link as several rounds from a Roman biplane bounced off the Leopard's armor as it flew past

"Herr General, that biplane had roman markings on it!" Aberly's Gunner shouted

"Did he just say Romans?!" Dagnur asked

"I'm afraid so Herr Dagnur!" Aberly replied, "If you guys have any anti-air weaponry, now would be a good time to get them out!"

"We're working on that!" Dagnur shouted as Aberly's Leopard was joined by two more as they maneuvered to avoid the attacks of the biplanes while mobile anti-air vehicles came online and began firing into the air as the men and women of the British 67th Infantry Division joined the fight, firing their rifles and MANPADs up into the air

"About time the tommies get up!" One of the German Tank Commanders shouted

"Shut it!" Aberly replied

"Aberly! We have another problemâ€¦you know those Blackwater guys we fought with the Americans against? Well they're back!" Dagnur shouted, the sound of gunfire and helicopter engines clearly in the background

"Blackwater?!" Aberly shouted, "I thought you guys wiped out of all of them in the war?!"

"We didâ€¦" Dagnur replied, "We COULD use your firepower over here!"

"Jawhol! Where are you?!" Aberly asked him

"Near the harborâ€¦we have warships out there too!" He replied, "This just keeps getting better and better!"

"Glad you think soâ€¦" Aberly thought to himself, "All units move toward the harbor, we have incoming enemy ground forces!"

**Cape Girardeau, MO **

**Common Pleas Courthouse **

Reaper had been sleeping in his office chair when Smict came running into the room

"Reaper! REAPER! Get your ass up! Berk's under attack!" Smict shouted to Reaper, who fell back in his chair before jumping up to his feet

"Let me guessâ€¦Blackwater and Romans?" He replied as he and Smict ran out of the room

"Yes, we got reports of helos and warships coming in from all over the Eastern Barbaric Archipelago." Smict said to him

"What kind of warships?" Reaper asked him

"We don't know, but it sounds like WWI-era ones." He replied, "We also got seaplanes attacking our forces on Berk."

"Casualties?" Reaper asked him

"We don't know yet, it's been nothing but chaos in the nerve center. But we're working on it." He replied

"Anything from Barnes or Karlson?" Reaper asked him

"They're all over the island trying to gain air superiority. But from what we've been hearing, it's been a cake walk in that department." He replied

"Well it's biplanes against jet fighters and modern anti-air weaponry, what else do you expect?" Reaper asked him, "How long will it be until we can deploy more forces to the Archipelago?"

"We're assembling more QRFs for deployment, but it's going to take us four days to assemble a larger force and then transition it!" He replied, "But the Coalition is more than likely to intervene since most of them have forces already assembled due to the Outcast Invasion!"

"What is going on with the Outcasts?!" Reaper asked him

"Alvin is apprehended and been handed over to a squad of Marines and the dragon riders who are supposed to be escorting him back to the village last time we heard." He replied, "But we have NO idea where they are!"

"Oh that's just great!" Reaper said to him

10. Chapter 10

Chapter Ten: The Archipelago Wars

**Isle of Berk **

**Half an hour Later **

Rather than flying in the chaotic air battle over their heads, Bravo Squad and the Dragon Riders were moving on foot through the forests toward the village as they escorted Alvin while keeping an eye out for any remaining Outcasts

"The village is much farther than I thought it wasâ€¦" Astrid said as she rode on Stormfly next to Henderson

"Try walking across Camp Lejeune in the middle of summer." He replied

"Camp Lejeune?" Astrid asked him

"It's the base we're stationed at back in the states; it's an absolutely miserable place during the summer." He replied

"Where is it?" She asked him

"North Carolina, near the Atlantic Coast." He replied

"I may have heard Barnes talk about it once." Astrid said to him

"Wouldn't surprise me, the APM maintains a garrison there as well. But it's primarily just usâ€¦the Marines." He replied, "This isn't really a time for chit-chat you know?"

"Sorry, but this is the first time we've really socialized with somebody outside the APM." Astrid said when a flaming biplane darted across the sky followed by a USAF Fighter jet that broke off after the biplane crashed in the trees near the path they were on

"Hold on!' Henderson shouted

"What is it?" Astrid asked him

"I want to check out this damn biplane." He replied

"Uhhhâ€¦why?" Snotlout asked him

"Would you like to know who we're fighting?" He replied, "You guys stay here, Bravo on me!"

Bravo Squad followed Henderson through the trees toward the crash site where the remains of the biplane burned as its pilot crawled out from the wreckage mumbling something in Latin as Henderson and his men came closer, their weapons aimed at the injured pilot as the dragon riders followed Henderson with Alvin before Toothless and Hiccup landed with Barnes nearby

"There you guys are!" Hiccup shouted as they ran toward them as the Pilot pulled out a revolver and shot Henderson once in the leg and then aiming the gun at Astrid and Stormfly, but before he could pull the trigger, Barnes pounced onto the pilot, crushing him to death under his weight as Henderson grabbed his leg and withered in pain as Jasmine ran to him with a med kit

"Hold still!" She shouted to him as she opened the med kit and pulled out a roll of bandages that she used to wrap a bandage around Henderson's injury before cutting it from the roll with a pair of scissors while Benjamin and Turner lifted Henderson up to his feet and put his arms around their shoulder

"So much for walking to the villageâ€¦" Astrid said, "Get him on my dragon; we're going to be flying the rest of the way."

"Flying?" Henderson asked

"What never flown before?" Astrid asked him

"Only once during the Gene Corp Warâ€¦and that was in the back of a VTOL in a closed compartment." He replied

"Well don't worry this will be easy." Astrid said as Turner and Benjamin helped him get to Stormfly, who knelt down so they could get Henderson on

"How the hell did that little thing get through your Kevlar?" Turner asked as Snotlout picked up the revolver that was still in the dead pilot's hand and opened it up, revealing the five rounds of .44 armor piercing ammunition

"Well that explains whyâ€¦but how the hell did they get that kind of am-." Benjamin said before Barnes interrupted

"Blackwater, General Karlson reported seeing helicopters with their markings flying in from their fleet offshore." Barnes replied with his translation collar

"Just get me out of hereâ€¦" Henderson said as Astrid got onto Stormfly in front of him as the rest of his squad got on the other dragons with their riders

"You going to be okay back there?" Astrid asked him

Henderson nodded

"Just get this show on the ro-well in the air." He said before they took off into the air toward the village

Berserker Home Islands

36**th**** Bundeswehr Armored Division **

Aberly's Leopard tanks arrived at the Berserker Harbor where the Berserkers and their few remaining warships were attempting to hold off the attacking Blackwater Airborne troopers and the steel ships of the Roman fleet offshore

"There you krauts are!" Dagnur shouted over the radio, "Now do whatever you do!"

Aberly sighed

"I really hate that kid." He thought to himself as a Blackwater BMD-3 rolled into view, firing its auto cannon and machine gun at the Berserkers

"Acthung we have an enemy panzer to our left!" The Gunner shouted to Aberly

"I see it, I see it!" Aberly replied, "Gunner target BMD to our left!"

The Gunner turned the turret and main toward the BMD-3 that was now turning its own toward one of the Leopard tanks

"Target acquired!" The Gunner shouted to Aberly

"Fire!" He replied before the gunner pulled the trigger for the 140mm main gun that hit the BMD-3 and knocked it onto its side

"BMD is kaput!" The Gunner shouted as the Leopard's active point defense came online as a Blackwater soldier fired a RPG-29 at it and intercepted the incoming projectile

"Load HE rounds!" Aberly shouted as turned the cupola machine gun toward the direct that the rocket came from as the Blackwater soldier loaded another rocket into his launcher, but Aberly mowed him down and the near ammunition carrier while the autoloader loaded a high explosive round into the breech as the gunner turned the turret to face the Blackwater soldiers

"Come to papa!" The Gunner shouted as he pulled the trigger and fired a HE round at a Blackwater MG team as a BMP-2 came out from the water and opened it's back hatches allowing it's passengers to get out as it stopped to fire it's turret-mounted ATGM launcher at a German Marder XI that was already distracted by a group of Blackwater infantry, destroying it completely

"SheiÎ²e!" Aberly replied as one of the other Leopard took out the BMP-2 with a AP round as more BMP-2s, BTRs, and PT-76s rolled ashore carrying more infantry as two of the Leopards were taken out by ATGMs from a Mi-28 as rowboats carrying soldiers and troop barges started to come toward the shore from the warships

"Everybody fall back!" Aberly shouted over the radio, "Get your people out of here Dagur! Save your strength!"

"What?! Why are we running?!" Dagnur replied before one of the warships fired a salvo of heavy shells over them, "EVERYBODY FALL BACK!"

Aberly's armored vehicles and the Berserkers fell back into the village as the Blackwater and Roman landing forces started to come ashore in droves

Isle of Berk

The skies over the Hairy Hooligan village were now clear of biplanes thanks to the efforts of the American fighter jets and dragons as the Barnes, the dragon riders, and bravo squad flew over it with Alvin being carried by Stormfly

"Is the sergeant okay?" Barnes asked Astrid telepathically

Astrid nudged Henderson with her elbow

"I'm still alive if that's what you're wondering, it's going to take more than a shot to the leg to kill me." He replied, "Are we about to land?"

"Just about sergeant." Hiccup said to him as they flew toward the Great Hall where a field hospital had been set up to take care of the wounded Americans and Viking where they landed and were greeted by Stoick and Gobber

"Hiccup!" Stoick said to Hiccup as he ran toward Hiccup and lifted him up in a hug while several U.S Army medics ran to help Astrid help Henderson climb off Stormfly

"We'll take him from here ma'am." One of the Medics said to Astrid as they escorted Henderson into the Great Hall as Stoick put Hiccup down and approached Alvin, who had been thrown to the ground by Stormfly as she landed

"You have a lot to answer for Alvin, but for now, we'll just let you rot in the jail." Stoick said to him as four Vikings lifted the former chieftain of the Outcast Tribe to his feet and dragged him away as Karlson and Tesla came out from the Great Hall

"We did what you said; we took out as many of those helos and biplanes as we could. But they just kept coming and now they've got a foothold north of The Long Beach!" Karlson said to Barnes, "There's also apparently a European Military detachment with the Berserkers because we've intercepted several transmissions from them to their commanders and it sounds like they're in the same amount of trouble as we are."

"Any word from Cape Girardeau?" He asked him

"They want us to hold onto Berk and the Meathead Islands until they or the other members of the Coalition can send us reinforcements." He replied

"Do we have enough forces to protect both islands?" Barnes asked him

"Not effectively, which is why we're planning to launch a preemptive strike on the Roman fleet and send it to the bottom of the Inner Sea because we certainly have more than enough firepower here." He replied, "We've already got the Meatheads and the navy in on it."

"It will also be a lot easier to take out those soldiers on those troopships and barges when they're still aboard them." Stoick said to Barnes

"Well I've never had to sink a major warship that was out of sea, but I guess it's worth the try." He replied, "But we and the dragon riders will be limited to taking out biplanes, small boats, and suppressing their air defenses unless they can find a way for us to carry torpedoes and teach the dragon riders how to use laser designators to guide cruise missiles."

"I think we can do the latter, but the engineers will have to look into the former." Karlson said to him, "But in the meantime I suggest you guys prepare yourselves."

**Cape Girardeau, MO
>APM Command Bunker

Reaper, Smict, Paxton, the rest of the President cabinet, and several APM and U.S Military Officers all had their focus on the TV sets in the Nerve as the Russian Duma voted to declare war on the Roman Empire and Blackwater while the European Security Council assembled for an emergency session in Geneva while several international news broadcasters reported about the fighting in the Barbaric Archipelago or the declaration of war from the other members of the Coalition

"The war hasn't been going on for a whole two hours yet and more than half of the Coalition has declared war while the others are in the process." Chavez said

"Who will be the first to get forces to the Archipelago?" Reaper asked Paxton

"It will probably be the Russians, Europeans, or the Israelis since they already have forces assembled for the war games and as QRFs." He replied, "Well the technically the Europeans already have forces on the Berserker Islands according to our recent Intel, but only two divisions."

"What's the process on the counter-attack against the Roman fleet attacking Berk?" Reaper asked Smict

"Conrad is planning to launch the attack before dawn." He replied, "If we can neutralize the invasion fleet and take out the foothold Blackwater has established on Berk, we can focus our forces, particularly our air power on helping the other tribes defend their islands until the Coalition can respond and launch a proper counter-attack."

**IRS(Imperial Roman Ship) Nero; Caesar-class Battleship

**

**Somewhere in the Mazy Multitudes **

Roman General, Atticus the Great was in the command bridge of the Nero as it sailed off the shores of the island where Fort Sinister where Roman engineers were hard at work establish a base of operations that would serve as the center piece of the Roman-Blackwater invasion of the Barbaric Archipelago

"General Atticus!" A Roman Officer said to Atticus with a Roman salute

"What is it?" Atticus asked him

"General Ovicula is proud to report that he has made landfall on Hysteria after a brief period of heavy resistance from the Vikings and is awaiting further instructions from you!" He replied

"Ahhhâ€¦progress at last; tell him to fortify his beachheads and prepare it for his tanks and heavy weaponry." Atticus said, "What is the progress of our forces on Berk?"

"General Aetius is taking additional time to prepare his forces, but is promising that he'll make landfall on Berk and the Meathead Islands before first light." The Roman Officer replied

"I understand his reasons; he's dealing with a more dangerous foe, much like General Decimus with those _Europeans_ who have been helping the Berserkers." Atticus said to him, "And where in Mars' name is the commander of Blackwater's forces?!"

"He's already ashore overseeing the construction of his headquarters." He replied

Atticus sighed

**Isle of Berk **

Henderson was laying down on a cot as a doctor looked at his leg wound

"Don't worry sergeant you'll be back on your feet soon enough." The Doctor said as he stood up before walking away while Henderson laid his head back on his pillow as Karlson came into the Great Hall to check up on him

"How's the leg?" Karlson asked with his translation collar

"Better than it was." Henderson replied

"You'll get it over it." Karlson said to him, "So Henderson, I've been hearingâ€¦rumors that Martin Henderson isn't you're real dad."

Henderson laughed lightly

"He's my dad's younger brother; my mom and he were never married that's just what he wanted people to think." He said to Karlson

"I know it's all in the records." He replied, "Your real dad, Jerry Henderson died in a car accident less than a month after your tenth birthday."

Henderson nodded

"My dad was always better than that piece of shit, they never got along either. Every time they were together, they did nothing but argue." Henderson said to him, "One time my dad beat the shit out of him and threw him out, but yet he still came to help take care of me and my mom after he died."

"He didn't really like you either did he?" Karlson asked him

"That's an understatement, he hated every inch of me." He replied, "The feeling was mutual."

"Which is why you helped us tried to apprehend himâ€¦" Karlson said to him

Henderson nodded

"Only regret is that we didn't catch him." He said to him, "Tell you the truth I'm surprised that he hasn't ended up dead from _mysterious_ circumstances."

"I'm sure that's coming sooner or later." Karlson replied, "So how's your daughter?"

Henderson closed his eyes and sighed

"She's with her grandmother; I was supposed to be calling her right about now." He said to her, "So I've heard you're a father now as well."

Karlson nodded

"Two best things that have ever happened to me." He said to Henderson as the doctor returned with auto injector filled with a light-gray substance

"This will sting just for a second." The Doctor said to Henderson as injected Henderson's leg with the substance

"What was that stuff?" He asked the Doctor

"A little present from the APMSF for your assistance for capturing Alvin, it'll make your wound heal quicker." Karlson replied

"Thanksâ€¦" Henderson said while in the village, Barnes, the other post-human dragons, and the dragon riders were preparing for the counter-attack on the Roman fleet

"The Roman fleet has positioned itself just northeast of Death's Head Headland where Blackwater has set up a fortified landing zone for their helos and paratroopers, but we're going to the ground pounders worry about them while we and every operable plane and VTOL goes after the fleet." Barnes said to the other post-human dragons, dragon

riders and their mounts, and the pilots of the 502nd with his translation collar, "According to our intel, the fleet consists of three battleships, four heavy cruisers, 60 troopships and barges, four seaplane tenders, and numerous smaller vessels including gun and torpedo boats; our main priorities is to take out the troopships, the tenders, any biplanes, along with any anti-air armament the ships may have while the VTOLs, jets, and our ships take out the larger targets."

"Where will the navy be coming from?" Asked Walton Kruger, a post-human Zippleback

"A wolf pack of Gato II-class attack submarines will be coming from the northwest and they will be followed by the USS Iowa and her escorts." Barnes replied, "The former of which will be taking care of the Roman battleships which been identified as two Lord Nelson-classes and a Iron Duke-class, which we believe to be the flagship."

"Figures that Blackwater gave them our designs." Jones replied

"The Iowa shouldn't have any problems taking out those ships because she can fire more accurately and from longer range." Robin said

"That's enough you two." Barnes said to them in dragonese

"What kind of AA guns are we talking about here?" Snotlout asked him

"Probably pom-poms and 3 inchers, the latter of enough are probably powerful enough to blast apart any dragon with or without armor." He replied with his translation collar

"What in Thor's name is a pom-pom?" Astrid asked him

"It's a 37mm rapid fire anti-air gun." Barnes replied, "I saw one once in a museum."

"What happens after we take out the fleet?" Hiccup asked him

"We'll divert our attention to taking out the Blackwater forces on the Headland and after they're gone, we'll start helping the other tribes repel the invasions of their islands until more reinforcements can arrive." He replied

"And how long will that take?" Wensky asked him

"I don't know, but they won't be any of our guys that's for sure." He replied

Russian Attack Submarine â€“ Western Mediterranean

Titov was with the captain in his quarters

"Why couldn't you send the transmission while you were launching the missiles?!" He asked the Captain

"Because the launch sequences disabled our long range comms long enough for Blackwater to start jamming it." He replied, "Plus it's

probably too late now, they've probably already started their invasion as far as we know."

Titov sighed

"How long will it be until we're out of range of their jammers?" He asked him

"I can't say Colonel, we don't know what kind of system they're using to jam us." He replied

"Great we're at war and we're probably the only ones who knows it!" Titov shouted

11. Chapter 11

Chapter Eleven: The Second Battle of Berk

**Isle of Berk **

**Sometime Later **

Barnes, Samantha, and Toothless were flying in a V formation leading the other post-human dragons, 502nd, and the dragon riders as they and aircraft from the 1st Legion, airships, and the American naval fleet flew toward the Roman fleet while below them, formations of American tanks and mechanized infantry moved to assault Blackwater's LZ at Death's Head Headland under the cover of darkness

"Spread out, we're about to fly over the Blackwater LZ!" Barnes shouted over his translation collar before he, Samantha, and Toothless spread further apart as the other post-human dragons, dragon riders, and the 502nd did the same and shortly afterward they started to come under fire from Blackwater anti-air guns and infantry on the ground

"Been waiting for the chance to return the favor." Tesla said over the radio with her translation collar as she and the others dodged the large caliber anti-air munitions before shot up at them

"Haven't we all." Emily replied as several SEAD aircraft flew under them and took out most of the anti-air guns and their mobile radar vehicles

"Thank god for the wild weasels." Barnes thought to himself as small arms fired continued to bounce off his armor as they flew over the Blackwater LZ

"Incoming bogies!" Samantha shouted as several formations of Roman biplanes and Blackwater gunships flew toward them

"We'll take care of these guys! The rest of you go after the ships!" Barnes shouted over the radio to the other post-human dragons as he, Samantha, their children, and Toothless and Hiccup broke off from the main formation with the 502nd

"You heard the man lets go sink some ships!" Carville shouted with his translation collar as he and the other post-human continued on as a squadron of 1st Legion F-45s broke off from their formation to help

the Night Furies

"I have a Havoc on my tail!" Zoey screamed over the radio as she was pursued by a Havoc as she dodged it's fire

"I see him!" Barnes shouted as he and Toothless went after the Havoc before Barnes spat a plasma blast at it and hit directly in the tail rotor causing the helicopter to spiral out of control and crash into sea

"Are you okay Zoey?!" Barnes asked his daughter over the radio

"I'm fine dad!" She replied, "Watch out!"

Two Roman biplanes came diving down toward Barnes, Toothless, and Hiccup who immediately maneuvered to dodge their fire

"Those things are really starting to annoy me!" Hiccup shouted as the biplanes came around again and started to pursue them

"Hey Hiccup! Do you know how to play chicken?!" Barnes asked Hiccup over the radio

"Please tell me you're joking right?!" Hiccup replied as he ducked to avoid several rounds from the biplane chasing after him and Toothless

"Do you think I would joke around in a situation like this?!" Barnes asked him

"Okay lets do this!" He replied as he directly Toothless to fly directly toward Barnes who was come toward him as he was chased by the other biplane

"On my mark!" Barnes shouted over the radio, "Three...two...one...now!"

Barnes and Toothless quickly turned to avoid each other while the biplanes crashed into each other and exploded

"I can't believe that worked!" Hiccup shouted as he wanted the debris fall into the ocean

"It ain't over yet!" Barnes replied as they regrouped and went after another Havoc that was chasing after Samantha who was after a biplane

"Sam, you got a helo on your six!" Barnes shouted to his wife over the radio

"I've noticed!" She replied as she dodged a barrage of rockets from the Havoc that flew over her and hit the biplane, destroying it, "God these guys' aim sucks!"

"Toothless take the shot!" Hiccup shouted as he aligned Toothless toward the Havoc

Toothless spat out a fully charged plasma blast that blasted the tail off the Havoc sending it spiraling out of control, hitting a Alligator, destroying both gunships

"Good kill!" Barnes said to him as the F-45s from the 502nd and 1st Legion finished off the last of the Roman biplanes and Blackwater gunships while Karlson latched onto the side of a Roman heavy cruiser and ignited the saliva he covered his armor with before climbing up the ship to the deck, scaring the gunner of a pom-pom, who ran away as Karlson grabbed the gun with his mouth and ripped it off it's mount and threw it into the water before climbing onto deck as Roman soldiers armed bolt-action rifles and primitive SMGs came running up from below deck

"GIVE IT YOUR BEST SHOT!" Karlson roared at the Romans in dragonese as they opened fire with their guns and watched as their rounds ricocheted or bounced off his armor until their emptied their clips and began to curse in Latin as they retreated from him as Karlson turned his attention to the gunner of one of the other pom-poms as it's gunner turned it to face him, but was knocked off the gun as a torpedo dropped by a Sea Mallard struck the cruiser on the starboard and exploded

"Karl! Get off that ship!" Tesla shouted over the radio as Karlson noticed two more torpedoes coming toward the ship and flew off the ship seconds before they hit the ship and that quickly capsized as Karlson sighed in relief as Katie, Wensky, and Emily attacked the pom-poms and 3in guns, knocking them out before flying off before cruise missiles from the USAS Cape Girardeau struck the warship, one of them hitting one of the forward turrets that exploded and ripped the bow off the ship sending it to the bottom of the sea

"These ships are sinking like rocks!" A USN Pilot shouted over the radio as the Iowa and Wisconsin and their escorts started to shell the three Roman battleships without stopping while also launching their cruise missiles at them and the other warships of the Roman fleet

"Okay everybody lets start going after those seaplane tenders and troopships!" Karlson shouted as the Night Furies joined them

"Did we miss anything?" Barnes asked Karlson

"Not much." He replied

"Gunboats!" Wensky shouted as the gunboats protecting the troopships and seaplane tenders began to fire their guns at them

"Take them out!" Barnes shouted over his translation collar as he charged up a shot and took out the first gunboat in a dive attack while Zoey followed suite and destroyed a second gunboat and she was followed by Samantha, Leon, Anna, and Toothless who took out four more of the gunboats

"Let the Night Furies handle those gunboats!" Karlson shouted to the others, "Just focus on taking out the AA guns on those ships!"

Nearby one of the Roman Lord Nelson-class battleships took a salvo from the Iowa's sixteen inches that penetrated the warship's armor and struck the ammunition storage areas causing a massive internal explosion that ripped the ship in half and created a powerful shockwave that traveled through the water and knocked over the nearly

Roman torpedo boats and gunboats while the other Lord Nelson-class was crippled as smoke billowed out of her while it's crew jumped off the ship as it slowly sank while the Iron-Duke although severely damaged was still firing it's guns at the distant American battleships, but couldn't zero in on them due to their ability to fire accurately on the move while most of the other major Roman warships were either severely damaged, crippled, sinking, or already sunk

"Those troopships are starting to lift anchor!" Ramirez shouted over the radio as several of the Roman troopships started to lift their anchors out of the water

"I can see that!" Karlson replied, "Take out as many as we can before they escape!"

"We're on it!" Barnes shouted after Toothless and Hiccup took out the last of the gunboats while he flew near the water's surface toward the one of the troopships dodging anti-air fire before going high up into the air while charging up a plasma blast and then diving back down at the troopship, aiming for the exposed fuel tanks and drums on her deck and then releasing the shot, striking one of the fuel tanks that exploded taking the other nearby tanks and drums, but also cooking off the ammo being stored beneath the deck in the cargo hold that exploded and sank the troopship, but also released a shockwave that knocked Barnes off balance causing him to crash into the water

"Barnes!" Samantha cried before Barnes surfaced

"I'm fine!" He replied over the radio before the pom-poms of one of a nearby troopship began to fire down at him forcing him to dive back beneath the water's surface as Zoey, Anna, and Leon went after them as Barnes swim toward a net that was hanging off the side of another troopship and started to climb up it

"I feel like a pirate." Barnes thought to himself as he climbed onto the deck and found himself surrounded by Roman soldiers, "Oh for *%$%'s sake."

The Romans fired at Barnes, but their rounds failed to penetrate his arm as he activated the plasma blades mounted on his tail and rammed through the soldiers as he swung his tail around blindly, cutting down many of the Romans before he plasma blasted one of the pom-poms which were firing at his children as they attacked the other troopship as more Roman soldiers came up from below the deck

"Figures I board the one loaded with god damn soldiers!" Barnes thought to himself as he plasma blasted a group of Roman soldiers before he noticed a Sea Mallard flying over the water's surfaced toward the ship carrying four torpedoes, "Oh come on!"

Barnes extended out his wings and took off as the Sea Mallard dropped it's torpedoes that shot through the water a high speed and struck the troopship which immediately began to sink beneath the waves as Roman soldiers and sailors started to jump off the ship as Barnes rejoined his wife

"Never do that again!" She shouted to him in dragonese as the

troopship their children were attacking was sunk by another Sea Mallard's torpedoes as the Iowa and Wisconsin delivered the killing blow to the Iron-duke class and the resulting explosion split the Roman warship in half and effectively ending the threat posed by the Roman fleet to Berk while onshore Stoick, Gobber, Spitelout, and Adah were helping lead the American-Viking Assault on the fortifications protecting Blackwater's landing sites

"Kind of glad I missed out of the Gene Corp War now if this is hard these guys fought!" Adah shouted as he took cover with Stoick and Spitelout from a Blackwater machine gun nest

"These mercenaries are far more well trained than the ones we fought in the Gene Corp, more disciplined too!" Gobber replied as an APMSF Pershing II tank rolled up and took out the machine gun nest with it's main gun before firing off it's smoke grenade dischargers to create a smokescreen for the Vikings

"Charge!" Stoick shouted as he led the Viking charge into the Blackwater fortifications on Thornado through the smokescreen while the Pershing II advanced slowly as it was joined by four more Pershing IIs and a Megathon that took out the remaining machine gun and crow nests

"You can always trust the APMSF to bring in the big guns!" Adah shouted, "Come on lets knock these guys out!"

Thornado sonic blasted away a group of Blackwater Mercenaries as Spitelout and Gobber led the Viking charge into the

"What kind of dragon is that?!" A Blackwater Mercenary shouted

"Who cares?! SHOOT THEM!" Another replied as they started firing at Thornado and Stoick, who dodged out of the way and then Thornado turned around and blasted them away with a sonic blast

"BMD!" Spitelout shouted as a camouflaged BMD smashed it's way through the treeline while firing it's autocannon at the Hairy Hooligans before it was taken out by one of the Pershing IIs

"I forgot how much I hated those things..." Gobber said as he glanced at the burning wreck of the BMD as a group of Blackwater Mercenaries came running through the path it made through the trees followed by a Sprut-SD tank destroyer which immediately fired it's main gun at one of the APMSF Pershing, but it's round exploded on impact with it's force field before it was taken out by a ATGM from the Megathon while the Vikings were joined by a platoon of U.S Army infantry who helped them take out the mercenaries before continuing onward into the Blackwater LZ, quickly overrunning it

**Cape Girardeau, MO **

Common Pleas Courthouse

**Several Hours Later **

Reaper was seated with Chavez as the leaders of the other member nations of the Coalition filed into the court room turned conference room with their translators and assistants and sat at the same table with Reaper and Chavez while chattering about the War in the Barbaric

Archipelago

"Lets get this over with." Reaper said to himself as he stood up as the other leaders went quiet as the APMSF Guardsmen guarding the main door closed and locked it

"Thank you for meeting with me on such short notice, I'm sure of you have been busy these past few hours." Reaper said to the gathered heads of state as they looked at them, "But if we are to resolve this crisis quickly, our armed forces must work together."

Reaper sat down as the European Prime Minister, Alberta Linto began to speak

"The latest reports from the leaders of our two divisions on the Berserker Home Island have been grim, Roman and Blackwater forces have secured a beachhead at the Outcast harbor along with several landing zones around the Berserker village and are amassing a large force that they cannot hope to stop without assistance from the outside and the only friendly force capable of doing that is General Conrad's." She said, "Who I believe is now free to use his forces else where now that the threat of the invasion at Berk has been removed."

"I've spoken with General Conrad after the destruction of the Roman fleet and he will be sending a relief force to the Berserker Home Islands, but we also must worry about the state of the other tribes particularly the Hysterics who are now on their last legs." Reaper replied, "But problem is that Conrad does not have forces with him to effectively defend the Barbaric Archipelago by themselves, which is why we must figure out a way of quickly amassing a larger force to reinforce him with."

"We'll be ready to deploy a quick reaction force to Hysteria in three hours." Said the Russian President, Artur Rusnak and was translated by his translator "But they will not have enough firepower with them to take on the Roman fleet, only enough to handle the ground and air forces, for that we will need the assistance of the naval forces you have in the Archipelago."

"Our naval fleet will provide what assistance it can, but like General Conrad's forces, it is not large enough to defend the entire Archipelago." Reaper replied, "But that we can solve quickly be simply sending more warships, which we're already in the process of doing, but ground forces will take a bit longer to deploy for that I suggest amassing a multinational task force consisting of what forces that are currently ready for deployment to send."

"And who will command this task force Mr. President?" Asked the Israeli Head of State, Netanel Bronfman

"Well I guess General Conrad since he's already in the Archipelago and has over a century of experience unless you really want to start that debate Bronfman." Rusnak replied, "And I should remind, we really don't have the time for a prolonged debate."

Bronfman sighed and slouched down in his chair while the usually quiet Canadian President, Nicolas Tremblay stood up

"I agree with Rusnak, we cannot afford to waste any time in worthless

debate!" He shouted, "We must send forces and we must send them_ now_!"

The other heads of state nodded in agreement

"Well then I guess it's decided then?" Said the Asian Head of State, Prashant Chopra, "But we also must think of a way to retaliate against the Romans for this."

"You let us hand the retaliation part because overwhelming retaliation is the APMSF's specialty." Reaper replied

**Mazy Multitudes **

**Fort Sinister - Blackwater and Roman Headquarters **

While Roman and Blackwater engineers continued to construct the other buildings of the base, Atticus was meeting with Blackwater Commander, Patrick Walker after hearing about the destruction of the fleet at Berk from the captain of a gunboat that managed to escape destruction

"YOU TOLD ME THAT THE AMERICANS WOULDN'T ATTACK OUR SHIPS LIKE THIS!" Atticus shouted at Patrick

"I did...but they've must have received reinforcements after they discovered and destroyed our scouting party." He replied, "But it doesn't matter, our invasions of the other tribes' home islands are well underway and doing quite well."

"Indeed, but for how long though? Without General Aetius keeping the American forces on Berk tied down they're free to use their forces to reinforce the other Viking Tribes." Atticus said to him

"True, but the Americans will be spread then as their force is likely not large enough to cover the entire Archipelago effectively." He replied

"Unless they receive reinforcements from their world." Atticus said

"It will take the Americans and their allies quite some time to assemble any force worth reckoning with general, so for now time is our side." Patrick replied

Atticus sighed

"Maybe for your forces, but that European force on the Berserker home islands has destroyed several of our divisions in one engagement." He said to him

"Yes, but if you haven't noticed, General Ovicula has also reported that the Europeans are becoming more resistant to deploy their forces in combat, probably due to supply shortages." He replied

Atticus nodded

"Indeed, but we're also acting off limited resources as well. Commander." He said to Patrick

"Yes but we have a supply line." He replied, "Speaking about that when will our first wave of reinforcements arrive?"

"Three days at the least." Atticus said to him, "Should we try going after Berk again?"

"Maybe at a later time." He replied, "But for now we need to focus on taking out the Berserkers and finishing off the Hysterics."

**The Isle of Berk **

Barnes was with Karlson and Stoick as they reviewed the situation with Conrad in the Great Hall

"With the Roman fleet here now turned to scrap metal and the survivors being fished out by our search and rescue birds, we're now free to help the other tribes." Conrad said to them, "But it's still a task that is easier said than done."

"Nothing is never easy these days." Karlson replied with his translation collar

"When have they ever have been?" Stoick asked him, "So what's your plan?"

"Well the Hysterics need our help the most because it sounds like they're on their last legs." Conrad replied, "But so do the Europeans and Berserkers. So here's what we're going to do, we're going to deploy the jarheads on the Berserker Home Island while we focus everything else on Hysteria while also leaving behind a small force to watch over this place since there is still some Outcast stragglers around Raven's Point that we're still trying to stamp out."

"Are you sure the Marines can handle themselves?" Karlson asked him

"They're U.S Marines, they can handle themselves just fine." He replied, "But lets just hope that multinational task force gets here before they run out of supplies."

"It's still pretty risky to leave them without support." Barnes said, "What about me and my guys stay with them since you don't really need us on Hysteria?"

"He has a point Conrad." Karlson said to Conrad

"If you want to help them go ahead Barnes, I'm not stopping you." He replied, "I'm guessing Hiccup and his friends will be joining them?"

"I wouldn't doubt it one bit." Stoick replied

"Then it's settled, Barnes I suggest you and your guys get some rest because you'll need it." Conrad said to him, "Stoick I also need you to tell me what you know about the Hysterics because I've never worked with them before."

Stoick nodded while Barnes trotted away

"You really think the Marines will need your help?" Karlson asked

him

Barnes nodded while nearby Henderson was getting up from his cot as he tested his leg to make sure it was fully healed while Jasmine and Turner watched

"Wow that APMSF shit really worked, wish they gave us that stuff." Jasmine said to Henderson

"We'll get it eventually." Turner replied

"Where's the others?" Henderson asked them

"At the rally point, I think we're about to be redeployed judging from that discussion that they just had." Jasmine replied as she motioned to Barnes and Karlson as they walked out of the Great Hall and took off into the air while Stoick talked to Conrad about the Hysterics

"I figured we would." Henderson said, "You two go find the others, I'll meet at the rally point. Do you know where they put my equipment?"

"It's over there." Turner said as he motioned toward Henderson's equipment which was on a folding table before he and Jasmine started to walk away

"Did you hear him and Karlson talking earlier?" Jasmine asked him

"Yeah...I never imagined him being the fatherly type." He replied, "Tell you the truth, I wasn't much surprised that Martin Henderson wasn't his real dad, he looks nothing like the %$%#ard besides hair color."

"Me too." Jasmine said

12. Chapter 12

Chapter Twelve: Drawing the Lines

Isle of Berk

American Staging Area

**A Hour later **

Henderson was on a video phone with his seven year old daughter, Ellie while his squad resupplied themselves with fresh ammunition from a ammo depot as their platoon prepared to move out

"I have to go soon sweetie, be good to your grandmother you hear me!" Henderson said to her

"I will dad, I love you." She replied

"I love you too...bye." Henderson said to her

"Bye daddy." She replied before he ended the call and sighed as she

slouched against a crate and looked up into the sky without noticing Hiccup, who had been listening to him

"How old is your daughter?" He asked Henderson, who jumped up

"Don't scare me like that kid, bad things can happen." He replied, "And she's seven years old...do you need something?"

"Just wanted to thank you for capturing Alvin for us." Hiccup said to him

"You don't need to thank me." He replied, "So I've heard you and your friends are getting stuck with us on the Berserker Home Islands."

"We are." Hiccup said to him, "And so is the 502nd."

"That's who I meant by friends." He replied

"Karlson has been saying a lot about you, he says you're a good man." Hiccup said to him

"Is that so?" He asked him

Hiccup nodded

"So how is the Marines different from the Army?" Hiccup asked

"Training and a few pieces of equipment." Henderson replied, "But the main difference is that we're not our own branch, we're technically part of the navy."

"Like how the APMAC and APMNC are part of the APM?" Hiccup asked him

"Exactly." He replied

"So were you drafted?" Hiccup asked him

"No, I was assigned to the marines for my mandatory national service term after I graduated high school and decided to stay and get a commission after my term was up." He replied

"What's a commission?" Hiccup asked

"It's what a enlisted man needs to become an officer." Henderson replied, "But I never got one..."

"Why not?" Hiccup asked him

"Some of the brass are suspicious of due to my uncle's activities." He replied

"Yeah I heard Karlson mention him." Hiccup said

"The APMSF had the same feeling about him that I did...except they didn't have to grow up around him." Henderson said to him

"You know I figure somebody like you would be in the APM or even in

the APMSF." He replied

"I've put some thought into it before, but I'll probably get the same reaction as I do from the brass when my CO tries to put me up for a commission because believes my uncle is my father..." Henderson said, "I would rather kill myself than be that man's son."

"3rd Company, it's time to move out!" Henderson's Company Commander shouted

"Come on Henderson it's time to go!" Jasmine shouted as she and the rest of Bravo Squad began to leave

"Well come on kid, we better get going." Henderson said to Hiccup

"I do have a name you know." He replied, "It's Hiccup."

"Well come on Hiccup, we need to go before you get left behind and I get chewed out by my CO." Henderson said to him

Hiccup nodded and followed Henderson as he joined the rest of his squad at the Assembly Area where the Marines were being loaded onto the VTOLs that would take them to the USAS Patton that would take them to Berserker Home Islands, also there was the other dragon riders

"Hiccup come it's time to go!" Astrid shouted to Hiccup

"Coming! It was nice speaking to you sergeant. Again thanks for capturing Alvin." Hiccup said to Henderson, who nodded as Hiccup ran to join the other riders as they mounted on their dragons before taking off toward the Patton while Henderson and Bravo boarded a VTOL

"I can't remember...didn't we fight alongside the Berserkers once before during the First Gene Corp War?" Turner asked

"We did, but only in one battle." Henderson replied, "I quite recall not being too fond of them."

"Only Berserker I remember is that lunatic of a chieftain...wasn't Dagger or something like that?" Benjamin asked

"It was Dagur, but he wasn't just only a lunatic, he was a *%$%ing smart ass. I remember him mouthing off to the commander of the 4th Legion." Jasmine replied

"Well we need to put all that behind us now because we're going to be working alongside them again." Henderson said to his Squad

USAS Patton

Calvin and Sheva were sound asleep in a corner of the Patton's Cargo Bay as their parents and Barnes watched them

"I'm not really comfortable with leaving them up here without anybody we know watching them." Karlson said to Barnes telepathically

"They're old enough to take care of themselves Karl, they'll be

fine." He replied

Karlson snorted as Samantha came into the cargo bay from the hangar

"Barnes, we've got a new problem." She said to her husband

"What is it?" He asked her

"Emily Wensky just started to puke her guts out, looks like the flu or some kind of food poisoning." She replied as Calvin lifted up his head at the mention of Emily's name

"Well Calvin did say something earlier that she had been complaining about her stomach hurting earlier." Tesla said to Barnes and Samantha

"Is this true Calvin?" Barnes asked Calvin

"Yeah...but she said she could walk it off." He replied

"She got that from her mother..." Samantha said to Barnes telepathically

"When did this start?" Barnes asked Calvin

"Shortly after we left North Africa." He replied

"Probably something that was in those damn smelly ass chickens that they gave the Nadders to eat, we might want to check on the others to make sure they're not infected as well." Karlson said to Barnes

Barnes sighed

"Why now..." He said before activating the radio on his translation collar, "Has any of our Deadly Nadders been experiencing stomach aches? Because now would be the time to say something about it."

All the post-human Deadly Nadders reported in, with none saying that they had kind of ache

"Well then it's just isolated to Emily then...where is she now?" Barnes asked Samantha

"Her parents took to her to the sick bay to get checked out by Ward." She replied, "What do you think it is?"

"Probably food poisoning." Barnes said

"Is she going to be okay then?" He asked them

"We don't know yet Calvin, but you'll be the first one we'll tell if we hear anything I promise." Barnes replied

Calvin nodded

"I didn't know Calvin and Emily were still that close." Barnes said to Karlson telepathically

"Where have you been?" He replied as the dragon riders flew into the hangar bay with some of the Marine VTOLs including the one carrying Henderson and Bravo Squad

"Okay everybody out!" Henderson shouted as he and his squad started to climb out of the VTOL with Henderson landing in a large puddle of slime

"What the hell is that shit?" Jasmine asked as Henderson walked out of the slime puddle as Astrid dismounted from Stormfly before seeing the puddle

"That would be...dragon vomit." Astrid said

"I've walked in worst..." Henderson replied, "This stuff isn't toxic right?"

"No." Astrid said, "But I would suggest cleaning it off your boots though."

"Sorry about the mess...one of the Wensky kids got sick." Zoey said to Henderson and the Dragon Riders with her translation collar

"Which one?!" Hiccup asked

"Emily, her parents took her to the sick bay." Zoey replied as her parents and the Karlsons came out from the cargo bay

"Is she going to be okay?" Astrid asked Zoey, who made a shrug-like motion with her wings before looking at Toothless

"How's your leg Uncle Toothless?" She asked him

"It's been better." He replied

"Are you guys ready to go?" Barnes asked the dragon riders

Hiccup nodded

"Well me and Tesla better get over to the Cape Girardeau with the rest of the Legion." Karlson said, "Good luck with the Berserkers you guys."

"Same to you with the Hysterics, but at least you'll be the first to be reinforced." Barnes replied

Karlson nodded before he and Tesla took off out of the hangar and headed toward the USAS Cape Girardeau that would be taking the 1st Legion and the rest of the task force to Hysteria with the USAS St. Louis

"Really looking forward to seeing Dagur again..." Hiccup said

"You've met him before?" Barnes asked him with his translation collar

"Yeah, it was before the Gene Corp War and lets just say, he really makes true of his title." He replied

Berserker Home Island

36**th**** Bundeswehr Armored Division **

American fighter jets had successfully established a no fly zone over the Berserker Home Island, easily knocking any Blackwater and Roman aircraft out of the sky, allowing airlifters flying from the Coalition verse to paradrop supplies to the Berserkers and European divisions as CAS aircraft have forced the Romans and Blackwater to temporarily pull back behind their lines while on the ground, Aberly was observing their lines with his rangefinder while standing in the unbuttoned cupola hatch of his Leopard

"Thought I would never be happy to see American aircraft in the sky again." Aberly thought to himself as an F-45 flew overhead, "Would still rather have their ground forces here though."

"How long until the American task force gets here?" He asked his Gunner

"An hour." His Gunner replied

"Good enough, get us out of here before they spot us!" Aberly said as he receded back into his tank and buttoned up the hatch as the Leopard's driver threw the tank into reverse

APMSF Headquarters â€“ Location Classified

Hidden by an advanced cloaking generator and protected by an elaborate defensive system, the headquarters of the APMSF was a massive structure built into the side of a extinct volcano in the American Northwest and it was also where Reaper, the commanders of the APMSF Stormtrooper Legions, and General Smict were planning their retaliation against the Romans and Blackwater, an all-out attack on Rome itself by the Legion and the 3rd Shock Army

"We'll blow through the Roman Army like a saw through wood, but I'm more concerned about Blackwater because what we've been hearing so far is that they're better trained and equipped than the forces we fought during the First Gene Corp War." Smict said to Reaper and the gathered APMSF Generals in the Meeting Room

"Yes, but we still have the better equipment and no doubly better training." One of the APMSF Generals replied

"Smict has a point general." Reaper said to him, "Besides the forces we've encountered so far in the Barbaric Archipelago, we have little intel on the strength and capabilities of these Blackwater forces besides the aforesaid fact that they're better trained and equipped than the ones we fought in the 1st war. So we can't take any chances, which is why we're taking off the gloves and unleashing everything in the APM's and APMSF's arsenal short of WMDs on these guys because unlike the 1st Gene Corp War, this isn't taking place on our soil so we don't have to worry about collateral damage."

"Do we even know what kind of assets Blackwater and Gene Corp even have in Rome besides military presence?" One of the Other APMSF Generals asked

"I'm afraid that's a negative general, we have no intel on the extent of their operations in the Roman Empire and as far we know, it could stretch far beyond Rome." Reaper replied, "But we'll find out when we capture the Roman emperor and burn Rome to the ground."

"And hopefully Blackwater and Gene Corp with it." The General said

**Mazy Multitudes **

**Fort Sinister **

General Atticus and Walker were in their planning room reviewing their changing situation

"What is the progress of General Decimus' forces?" Walker asked Atticus

"Not good, American planes from Berk have intervened and gained total air superiority over the island along with hitting his fleet and main attack force, inflicting heavy casualties and grinding his offensive to a halt while their air transports drop supplies to the Europeans and Berserkers." He replied

"What about General Ovicula?" Walker asked

"He has only reported brief incursions by American aircraft into the island's airspace, but the progress of his ground forces is starting to slow as the Hysterics have burnt their village down to the ground and retreated into the forests where they have resorted to using hit and run tactics against our forces." Atticus replied, "But just in case, he has concentrated his aircraft along with a majority of his anti-air weaponry to defend his beachheads and fleet so what happened at Berk doesn't repeat itself there."

"Good." Walker said to him, "If things get any worst on the Berserker Home Islands, order General Decimus to withdraw his forces and reinforce General Ovicula."

"Think the Americans will strike against him?" He asked him

"It's likely." He replied, "But the Berserker Home Island's strategic value will be nullified if we capture Hysteria, so losing it may not be a big sacrifice."

Atticus nodded

"Hysteria won't mean anything either if we're facing all the tribes, the Americans, and their allies at the same time." He said to him

**Western Mediterranean Sea; Near the Straits of Gibraltar â€“ Viking Verse **

Colonel Titov was in his quarters sleeping in his bunk when he was awaken by the loudspeaker coming on

"Attention all hands, prepare for transitioning. I repeat, all hands prepare for transitioning. ETA three minutes." A Russian Naval Officer said over the Loudspeaker before going off

"Finally..." Titov said to himself as he sat up in his bunk before standing up and leaving his quarters before heading toward the bridge where he found the Captain speaking to the Officer who was in charge of initiating the process of Transitioning

"There you are colonel, I was about to send one of my men to find you." The Captain said to him

"Yeah I heard the announcement, have we established contact with command?" He asked him

"Still nothing." He replied

"Tried reaching the Americans on Berk?" Titov asked

The Captain nodded

"Yes and we did hear back from them, but we're too late to warn them, the Romans have already struck them and most of the Barbaric Archipelago." He said to him

"Shit." Titov thought to himself

"How bad is it?" He asked the Captain

"The Americans and Hairy Hooligans have successfully secured Berk and they're preparing to launch a counter-strike against the Roman and Blackwater forces invading Hysteria and the Berserker Home Islands." He replied, "There is also going to a Multinational Task Force transitioning in sometime later as well."

Titov sighed

"Get us back home so we can get into this fight before it starts without us." He said to the Captain, who nodded

**Rome **

**Gene Corp Main Facility; Beneath the Imperial Palace **

Cameron Yates came into his office where American scientist, Azura Hatfield, formerly employed by the APM Weapons Research and Development Division where she was involved in several highly classified weapon projects including the one that was involved in the accident that created the rift connecting the Viking and Coalition Verses, which was the very reason Gene Corp hired her for Project Oppenheimer

"Mr. Yates, I need to have a word with you sir." Azura said to Yates as went behind his desk and sat down in his chair

"Make it quick, I have another meeting with the Roman emperor in a few minutes." He replied

"It's the reactor, it's almost finished but I don't know what it's going to do when we throw the switch to activate it." Azure said to him

"So you don't know if it's not going to blow up in our face or not?"

He asked her

Azure sadly nodded

Yates sighed

"Look if I know what went wrong with Project Hades in 2111, I would take the appropriate measures to avoid repeating it. But I don't know what went wrong and as far as I know I might just be building a bomb more powerful than one dropped on Hiroshima!" She said to him, "And not to mention that even the APM has limited knowledge in this field."

"What's the worst case scenario here?" Yates asked her

"The reactor does whatever it can to go unstable and cause an dark energy explosion which will wipe out everything in a 100,000 mile radius and create a tear in the space-time continuum otherwise known as a rift which could lead to who knows where." She replied, "Long answer short, we all die quick and painlessly."

"Great...so we're all sitting on top of what could be a giant bomb..." He said to her, "But luckily for us, we still have agents operation in our dimension that might be able to get their hands on any remaining data from Project Hades."

"Thank you, Mr. Yates." She replied

"Anything to stop us from being disintegrated..." He said to her, "When will the reactor be complete?"

"Four to three days." She replied

"Good, notify me if you have any further problems." Yates said to her, "Anything else?"

"No sir." She replied before she started to head out leaving Yates in his office by himself

"I wonder how the hell MacTavish got his hands on her." He thought to himself before he looked at his watch and realized that he was about to be late for his meeting with the Roman emperor

"Oh shit!" He said as he got up again before grabbing his briefcase and running out of his office

13. Chapter 13

Chapter Thirteen: The Battle of Berserker Island

Off the shores of the Berserker Home Island

**A Hour Later â€“ Day Two of the Archipelago Wars **

It was nearly noon as the USAS Patton was hovering just above the water's surface with it's cargo ramp opened to allow the U.S Marine AAVs and LAVs along with heavy hovercraft carrying tanks and other non amphibious vehicles to roll out of the cargo bay on their way to the landing beaches while VTOLs flew out of the hangar bay carrying

more Marines including Bravo Squad to the Berserker Home Islands while the 502nd, post-human dragons, and dragon riders escorted them

"Our first objective is to secure a LZ for the Patton, so it can unload the rest of the Marines!" Barnes shouted to the others with his translation collar's radio

"Why can't it land in territory still held by the Berserkers?" Astrid asked him

"Not enough room! So she's landing as close to them as she can!" He replied

"Nothing never is easy with you guys!" Snotlout shouted to him

"If you wanted easy you should've stayed back on Berk then!" Hiccup replied before looking down at Toothless, "How's the leg?"

"Better." Toothless replied telepathically as a formation of U.S Navy fighters flew past them and the VTOLs toward the Berserkers

"LZ is hot! I repeat LZ is hot!" The Pilot of one of the Lead USMC VTOLs shouted over the radio

"That's our cue!" Barnes shouted, "Lets rip these guys a new asshole! Everybody follow my lead!"

Barnes charged up a plasma blast before diving down at a Roman Mark V before releasing the shot and hitting the tank on it's thinly armored top that bursted into flames as he flew off, charging up a shot for another run while Zoey, Leon, Anna, and Samantha followed, taking two other Roman tanks and a Blackwater BRDM and BMP while Ramirez and the rest of the 502nd used ATGMs to knock out several more armored vehicles causing the surviving Roman and Blackwater soldiers to scatter as they ran to cover while the remaining armored vehicles discharged smoke screens if they could and started to do maneuvers to avoid being hit

"The crafty &# $% $ are using smokescreens! Everybody switch to thermal imaging!" Jones shouted over the radio with his translation collar

"Uhhh...we don't have that!" Hiccup replied

"Then just take out whatever you guys can see!" Barnes said to him before he started to charge up another shot for another attack run while on the ground, the first VTOLs landed while the next wave, including Bravo Squad's started to come in for their landing and came under small arms fire

"You jarheads better saddle up back there because it's going to get a bumpy!" The Co-Pilot of the VTOL shouted back to Bravo Squad and the other squad of Marines in the Passenger compartment as rounds bounced off the armored underside of the VTOL while it's crew chief and door gunner fired it's door-mounted miniguns at the Romans and Blackwater Soldiers below

"Oh god I think I'm going to be sick!" Jasmine said as she covered her mouth

"Hold it down Corporal!" Henderson shouted to her before the VTOL took a strong hit from the right causing the dim lights inside to go out while an alarm started to flash and beep

"We're hit, we're hit! Right engine is damaged and leaking fuel, we might not be able to make it back to the Patton!" The Co-Pilot shouted

"Okay! I'm setting her down!" The Pilot responded as he flipped the switched deactivating the alarm as he brought the VTOL down to the ground and pulled the lever that opened the back door before pressing a button that discharged smoke grenades to form a circled-shaped smokescreen around the VTOL as it landed

"Everybody out!" Henderson shouted as he, Bravo, and the other Marines ran out of the VTOL and formed a defensive perimeter around their downed VTOL as Roman Marines and Soldiers with a few Blackwater soldiers started to charge through the smokescreen at them

"Oh *%$%!" Jasmine shouted

"These aren't your history books' Romans!" A Marine from the other squad shouted

"You think so?!" Turner shouted at him

"Who cares?! Don't let them through!" Henderson shouted as two Roman machine gun teams appeared through the smokescreen pushing their Maxims into position before manning them and beginning to fire at the Marines

"Where the hell are the other squads?!" Hernandez shouted as they took cover and blindly fired their guns at the charging Romans and Blackwater soldier

"That however is a good question!" Henderson shouted as a VTOL flying over them was blasted out of the sky by a SAM

"We're all going to *%$%ing die here aren't we?!" Turner shouted

"Sergeant Henderson, tell your men to keep their heads down!" Astrid shouted over the radio as Ruffnut and Tuffnut flew Barf and Belch over the Roman machine guns leaving behind a cloud of green acid

"Take cover!" Henderson shouted as he and the others took cover as Astrid and Stormfly followed the twins igniting the acid and incinerating the Romans Machine Guns and their crews while injuring or killing the nearby soldiers and mercenaries while Astrid and Stormfly landed on the VTOL behind them

"Are you guys okay?!" Astrid shouted to them

"We're fine! Thanks for the assist!" Henderson shouted up to her as other Marines appeared as the smokescreen started to dissipate also revealing a disabled Roman tank that the crew had abandoned

"Hey Sarge isn't that one of the tanks from that book you have?"

Benjamin asked Henderson

"It is." He replied

"I thought tanks were supposed to have a turret?" Astrid asked him

"Depends on what type of tank you're talking about." He replied as Barnes landed nearby

"What's going on here?" He asked Astrid and Henderson with his translation collar

"Just checking out that Roman tank sir." He replied

Barnes looked at the disabled tank

"What about it?" Barnes asked him

"Just thought I would never see one up close." He replied

"Neither did I sergeant. But you can look at it later, we need you and your men to help secure the perimeter so the Patton can land and bring in the heavy equipment." Barnes said to him

"Where did Hiccup take the others?" Astrid asked Barnes

"Everybody is going to help the Marines landing on the beaches, the Romans are really giving the them hell there with their artillery." He replied

Astrid nodded before she and Stormfly took off and then Barnes looked at Henderson, who was preparing to move out with his squad

"Good luck out there sergeant, you're going to need it." He said to him before taking off

"Thanks..." He replied, "Bravo Squad! Move out!"

**American Beachheads **

When Barnes, Astrid, and Stormfly finally caught up to the others just as they started their attack on the Roman artillery guns that were shelling the Marines landing on the beaches below

"Looks like we're late to the party!" Astrid shouted to Barnes

"Not quite..." He replied when spotted several Blackwater and Roman tanks heading toward the beaches, "We've got enemy armor heading toward the beach!"

"I see it dad!" Zoey shouted as she broke off from the others and joined them as Barnes charged up a plasma blast before diving down at one of the Blackwater tanks before releasing the shot and hitting the tank, disabling it as he went back into the sky while Zoey charged up her own plasma blast and used it to knock out a Roman tank when they were joined by Samantha, Anna, Toothless, and Hiccup

"Call out your targets before you attack so we're all not trying to hit the same tank!" Barnes shouted over the radio

"Okay! We're going for the one on the far left!" Hiccup shouted over the radio as Toothless charged up a plasma blast before diving down at a Blackwater tank and knocked it out while Zoey went for another Roman tank in the center of the armored group, also knocking it out while Barnes hit another nearby followed by Samantha and Anna, who took out two tanks on the right

"Incoming friendlies!" Zoey shouted as two USAF Ground Attack aircraft joined in using ATGMs and rockets to knock out several more of the Blackwater and Roman tanks

"We'll take it from here General Barnes!" One of the USAF Pilots shouted over the radio to Barnes

"Copy that!" He replied as he, his family, and Toothless and Hiccup broke off from their attack on the Roman and Blackwater tanks before rejoining the others as they destroyed the last Roman artillery gun

3**rd**** Bundeswehr Armored Division **

Aberly and his tanks were supporting a counter-attack by the British Infantry and Berserkers against a fortified Roman position using their main guns to knock out machine gun nests and any tanks or armored vehicles

"Commandant, we have American infantrymen approaching the encampment from the east!" The Commander of one of Aberly's tanks shouted to him over the radio, "Look like Marines!"

Aberly turned his periscope in the direction of the American infantrymen and saw that they were indeed American Marines as they advanced on the Roman encampment while mortars and machine guns provided them with covering fire

"About time the yanks show up!" A British Infantry Commander shouted over the radio

"2nd Platoon, move to support the American advance! Has anybody established radio contact!?" Aberly shouted over his radio

"Working on it!" A German Officer replied while a platoon of Leopards broke off from the others and moved into positions that would allow them to support the advance of the American Marines that included Henderson and Bravo Squad

"Looks like some of those Kraut tanks are coming to help us!" A Marine shouted as the German tanks got into position

"Better than no tanks at all! Keep moving forward! We got to take out that observation post so their arty can't zero in on the LZ" Henderson's Platoon Commander shouted

"This is crazy!" Benjamin shouted as they were raked by Roman machine gun fire

"Just shut up and keep your head down!" Henderson shouted to him as the German tanks fired their main guns and destroyed the Roman machine gun nests

"GO! GO! GO!" Henderson shouted as he got up with Bravo Squad following closely behind into the Roman encampment where he was ambushed by a Roman Soldier wielding a bowie knife, who wrestled Henderson to the ground trying to stab at Henderson with the knife while he tried to push the Roman off him as he tried to reach for his KA-BAR

"Now I kill you American!" The Roman Soldier said in bad English while Henderson managed to get his hand around the handle of his KA-BAR before he ripped it out of it's sheath and stabbing the Roman in the neck as Bravo Squad and the other Marines entered encampment

"Are you alright?!" Jasmine asked Henderson as he pushed the dead Roman off him and placed his knife back into it's sheath before picking up his rifle again

"Yeah...not the first close call I've had." He replied as he got up while another Marine stopped long enough to grab the dead Roman's bowie knife before continuing onward with the rest of his squad

"Sergeant! I want you and your squad to link up with the Berserkers and Brits!" The Platoon Commander shouted to him after coming into the encampment

"Yes sir." He replied, "Come on Bravo lets move out!"

"Why do we have to deal with the Berserkers?!" Jasmine asked Henderson once they were out of hearing range from the Platoon Commander

"Exactly what I was about to ask." Hernandez replied

"I know we've had past confrontations with them, but if we like it or not they're our allies." Henderson said

"They weren't much of an ally in Arizona when they pillaged that poor town in the Magellan Rim after we took it from Blackwater." Turner replied

"Yeah..." Jasmine said with disgust, "Then they tried to do it with downtown Phoenix, but luckily we were there to stop them and after that the APMSF kept an eagle's on them."

"Well anyway keep your guard up, I'm not saying we have to trust them." Henderson said to her and the rest of Bravo Squad as they continued on toward the advancing British and Outcast Soldiers

"Sergeant! Identify yourself!" One of the British Officers shouted to Henderson

"Sergeant Jayden Henderson, ma'am, 72nd Marine Infantry Division." He replied

The British Officer nodded

"Well it's good that you Americans decided to show up when you did, I

thought they almost had us there." She said to Henderson, "Where is the rest of your division?"

"Either securing the LZ for our airship or clearing the rest of the baddies out of that camp." He replied

"Good, who is your commanding officer?" The British Officer asked

"Platoon Sergeant Powell, he should be in the camp somewhere." Henderson replied

The Officer nodded

"Can you take me to him?" She asked

Henderson nodded

"Right this way ma'am...where are the Berserkers?" He asked

"They're all over the place." She replied

"How long have you been here?" Henderson asked him

"Since before you guys arrived at Berk." She replied, "Guess you cleared the Outcasts out from Berk?"

"Most of them." Henderson said as Bravo and the British Officer and her men moved back toward the camp

"So where's your fleet?" The British Officer asked Henderson

"They're heading to Hysteria with the rest of the task force to help the Hysterics." He replied

"Figures, I wouldn't mind having the support of those battleships of your's." She said to him

**Mazy Multitudes **

Fort Sinister

Generals Atticus and Walker were in their planning room, reviewing the situation of their forces on the Berserker Home Islands after the intervention of American ground forces

"Our intel indicates that the American forces on the Berserker Islands are mostly Marines from the 26th and 22nd Marine Expeditionary Units supported by a single airship, which has landed and deployed at several more divisions including armored and mechanized infantry units supported by a large number of their aircraft and Viking dragon riders." Atticus said to Walker, "They have now linked up with the European and Berserker Forces and established a new defensive line in the eastern village."

"How has Decimus' forces held up?" Walker asked him

"The Americans have inflicted severe casualties on his forces and knock out more than half of his armored corps and most of his

remaining aircraft." He replied, "But he's requesting that he be allowed to attempt a counter-attack with his Praetorian divisions and special weapons before retreating from the island."

Walker rubbed his chin

"What do you think of this?" He asked Atticus

"It maybe our last change to salvage our situation on the Berserker Home Island, but we'll risk losing some of our best divisions if it fails and I don't even want to know the the Americans and their Allies will respond to the special weapons." He replied

Walker sighed

"Tell Decimus that he has my authorization to deploy the praetorians and his special weapons." He said to him, "But warn him to expect a severe retaliation from the enemy once he deploys the special weapons."

Atticus nodded

"Should we also give the same authorization to General Ovicula since he is facing a larger force?" He asked

"No." Walker replied

**Area 51 Airship Docks **

**Hangar Bay of the USAS Farmington **

Reaper and the commander of the APMSF 5th Legion, General James Horowitz were overseeing the offloading of an experimental new weapon from the cargo bay of a APMSF Heavy VTOL simply designated UGAD by it's developers and users

"Take good care of these general, it took a lot of tax payers' dollars to build these things and keep them out of the public eye." Reaper said to Horowitz

"Well at least you're putting them to good use..." He replied, "So what are they exactly?"

"Doctor Stryker should have sent you a EMAIL with a full detailed report about them and their capabilities." Reaper said to him

Horowitz nodded and looked at the UGADs

"Can't wait to see them in action." He said to Reaper

"Me neither, just don't go crazy with them because we only have six of them right now and this will be it's their combat trial." Reaper replied

"Don't worry I'll make sure my men take good care of her sir." Horowitz said to him

"Good, I'd hate to relieve you of your command if something happens to them." Reaper replied

"Are they that expensive?!" Horowitz asked in shock

"I'm afraid so." He replied

The General nodded

"I just hope they're worth it." He said to Reaper

"I hope so too..." He replied

**USAS Patton Cargo Bay **

While Sheva was curled up in a corner asleep, Calvin was laying down with Emily, who was curled next to him

"Are you feeling any better?" Calvin asked Emily telepathically

"A little bit...but at least I'm not puking anymore." She replied

"Well that's good." Calvin said, "You're looking smaller to me everyday now."

"They don't call you a Monstrous Nightmare for nothing Calv." Emily replied

Calvin snorted

"Sorry if I insulted you with that." She said to him

"It's okay, I can be called worse." He replied

"You know speaking about you being a Monstrous Nightmare, I've never actually seen you on fire." She said to him

"Well I can't do it in here with all this ammunition and fuel around us if you're wanting me to show you." He replied

"Nah I'm okay." She said to him, "Lets just get some sleep."

Calvin laid his head down next to Emily's and closed his eyes

14. Chapter 14

Chapter Fourteen: **Game Changers **

Berserker Home Island

502**nd**** Special Operations Fighter Squadron **

**Later that evening **

With the afternoon slowly giving way to twilight and the battle seemingly dying down for the time being, the post-humans and dragon riders were returning to the USAS Patton which was now holding position over the LZ where a FOB along with several fire bases were being constructed by U.S Navy engineers

"Wow the seabees are really working their asses down there on that FOB." Carville shouted over the radio as the group approached the Patton's hangar bay while Toothless and Hiccup began to fall behind

"Is something wrong buddy?" Hiccup asked Toothless, "It's the leg again isn't it?"

"I'll be fine." He replied as Barnes was the first to land in the hangar bay with Samantha and Zoey followed by the post-human dragons who were then followed by the dragon riders with Hiccup and Toothless being the last ones to land with Toothless grunting as he touched the ground

"Okay something's defiantly up." Hiccup said after he dismounted Toothless and went to check out on the cast on Toothless' leg to find it completely soaked in blood with a visible bullet hole,"Toothless! You've been shot! Why didn't you tell me?!"

"I didn't want you to worry." He replied as Barnes ran over

"How bad is it?" He replied

"I don't know, but it looks like he'll need a new cast." Hiccup said to him

"I'll go get Ward, you stay here." He replied

Toothless snorted

"I'm sorry Toothless, but you can't fly with it being like that. You can catch something we call gangrene which will cause it to rot and possibly even kill you." Barnes said to him

"What am I going to do then?" Hiccup asked Barnes

"We'll work something out." He replied as he turned out to get Ward, "Just keep him still, we don't want that getting any worst."

"I hate to say it buddy, but he's right, you can't fly like that." Hiccup said to Toothless, who snorted before laying down while on the ground near the Berserker Village, Henderson and Bravo Squad were holding position with the rest of their platoon and a platoon of Powell MBTs on top of a hill overlooking the village

"Henderson! Get up here!" The Platoon Leader shouted to Henderson as he looked down at the Roman positions in the village with his binoculars

Henderson got up and went over to him

"What is it sir?" He asked him before he handed Henderson the binoculars and pointed out one of the Roman positions

"Tell me what you think." The Platoon Leader said before Henderson put the binoculars to his eyes and looked at the position where he saw a unusual-looking Roman soldier wearing heavy body armor carrying a PPSh SMG who was standing idle on top of a barricade

"Looks like he's some kind of elite or heavy infantry." He said to

the Platoon Leader

"Exactly what I was thinking Sergeant, but I wonder why we're now just seeing, I don't recall encountering them during the landings." He replied

"Me neither." Henderson said to him, "They might be a general's bodyguard or something like that. Should we call it in?"

"I have already have, but command doesn't know anything about these guys." He replied

"Wouldn't be a first today, nobody was expecting this shit." Henderson said to him

The Platoon Leader nodded when the sound of distant artillery guns and incoming shells firing broke the silence

"INCOMING!" A Marine shouted as Henderson, the platoon leader, and the other Marines scrambled for cover as the shells began to fall and exploded as they hit the ground

"Not very big explosions for such big shells." The Platoon Leader said to Henderson, who was noticing a yellowish brown gas being released by the shells as they exploded

"GAS!" He shouted as he scrambled for his gas mask which was in it's bag on his belt as other Marines began to do the same, but for some it came too late as they began to cough violently while any exposed skin started to blister, when Henderson had his gas mask securely on his face, he looked next to him to check on the Platoon Leader, who had also managed to get his gas mask on along with the rest of Bravo Squad as the gas enveloped them

"Oh shit! Oh shit!" Hernandez stammered as horns started to sound off at the foot of the hill and were followed by the thunderous war cries of Roman soldiers as they started to charge up the hill

"Battle stations! We need to hold this hill at all costs!" The Platoon Leader shouted as Henderson and Bravo rushed to their positions and immediately began firing their weapons at the Roman soldiers at they appeared through the gas

"I can't barely see shit through all this gas!" Benjamin shouted

"Neither can I!" Jasmine shouted

"You let us worry about the seeing! Just don't let them get too close with those sticky bombs!" The Commander of one of the Powells replied while back at the USAS Patton, Hiccup and Barnes were watching as Toothless had his cast replaced by Ward as the others rested

"I know you don't want to hear this, but there is no way he can fly with it being like this." Ward said to them

Hiccup sighed while Toothless snorted and laid his head down when the Patton's alarms started to go off

"Not again..." Barnes said as the Patton's captain came on over the

PA system

"Code Black! Code Black! Hostile forces have deployed chemical weapons! I repeat hostile have deployed chemical weapons! All NBC Decontamination teams report to hangar bays! I repeat all NBC Decontamination teams report to hangar bays!" The Captain shouted over the PA System

"EVERYBODY SEAL THEIR SUITS! WE'RE FLYING OUT IMMEDIATELY!" Barnes shouted as the post-human dragons jumped up and started to air seal their armor

"What are we supposed to do?!" Astrid asked Barnes, who looked to the nearest APMAC Officer as the Patton's NBC Decontamination teams started to rush into the hangar bays with their equipment as medevac VTOLs started to fly into the hangar bay to unload victims of the chemical weapon attacks

"Lieutenant! I want you to take them to the armory and see if you can get them fitted with NBC gear and do we have any spare armor for their dragons?" Barnes asked her

"You guys brought a lot of spare parts for your armor, your maintenance teams might be able to throw new suits together from that." She replied before she motioned for Astrid and the other riders to come with her

"I'll stay here with Toothless!" Hiccup said to Barnes

"I already guessed that!" He replied as Zoey came to her father

"Dad, I don't have any shots left!" She said to him

Barnes sighed

"You can stay here with Hiccup and Toothless then." Barnes said to her

Zoey nodded as the other post-human dragons announced they were ready over the radio

"Okay! Lets fly out!" Barnes shouted before he led the other post-human dragons out the hangar while back on the ground, Bravo Squad was still holding it's position against the Roman onslaught as Blackwater troops and vehicles joined the attack

"Where the hell are our reinforcements?!" Jasmine shouted

"Exactly what I'm starting to wonder!" The Platoon Leader replied when a single USMC gunship flew overhead as it fired it's rocket pods and chaingun into the Roman and Blackwater horde

"Well speak of the devil!" The Platoon Leader shouted as the gunship turned around and made another strafing run on the attackers while it deployed IR flares to deflect two incoming SAMs launched from MANPADs

"Don't stop now, our job's not done yet! They're still coming!" Henderson shouted even as the USMC gunship began to turn around for

another strafing run before a large dark shape shot across the sky at full speed and grabbed the gunship by it's tail

"What the hell?!" Benjamin asked as the shape came, revealing itself to be a armored Typhoonmerang before it threw the gunship at the Marine positions

"OH *$%$!" Benjamin screamed as he and the rest of Bravo Squad dived for the cover as the out of control gunship crashed into their position and exploded as the Typhoonmerang flew off

"That is one big mother *%$%ing dragon!" A Marine shouted as the Typhoonmerang came back around

"Take it down before it gets too close!" Henderson shouted as he and the rest of Bravo Squad began to fire at the Typhoonmerang as it flew toward the hill, but none of their rounds made it through it's thick armor as the dragon began to shoot down a plume of fire, incinerating an entire squad and disabling a Powell and then began to circle around the hill as it continued to breath fire

"It's creating a cyclone!" The Platoon Leader shouted, "We need to take it down! NOW!"

"None of our weapons are getting through it's armor and it's flying too fast to reliably hit it with AT!" Henderson replied before the Typhoonmerang received a plasma blast from the right that forced it to fly away

"Sorry we're late!" Barnes shouted over the radio, "When did the Romans start using dragons?!"

"No idea!" The Platoon Leader replied, "But thank god you got here when you did, I thought we were toast there for a bit!"

"The Romans are continuing their attack!" Henderson shouted as another wave of armored Roman soldiers began to rush through the dying flames

"Keep your heads down, we'll take care of this!" Barnes shouted, "Zipplebacks, let create a thermobaric!"

"A WHAT?!" The Platoon Leader screamed as the post-human Zipplebacks flew in a delta formation over the Romans leaving behind a cloud of flammable acid

"GET TO COVER!" Henderson screamed as he and Bravo Squad once again ran for cover as Barnes ignited the gas with a plasma blast, creating a massive explosion that incinerated almost all the Romans and Blackwater soldiers

"Okay I think we're clear now!" Wensky shouted over the radio

"How bad is it down there?" Barnes asked the Platoon Leader

"Bad is a understatement general, I've got at least a company of men still in fighting condition the others are either dead or dying from the gas." He replied

"Get your men out of her-" Barnes said before one of the Powell tanks

on the hill were knocked out by a plasma blast

"FRIENDLY FIRE!" Henderson shouted

"That wasn't one of us!" Anna shouted over the radio before the dark shape of a Night Fury darted past the hill as a horde of armored and unarmored dragons descended upon the 502nd and Marines from the darkening sky

"AMBUSH!" Vasili shouted over the radio as the post-human dragons scattered and began to dogfight with the armored and unarmored dragons with Barnes chasing after a armored Deadly Nadder, which immediately turned around and came at Barnes

"FOR THE GLORY OF ROME!" The Deadly Nadder shouted with his own translation collar catching Barnes by surprise as he dodged the Deadly Nadder

"These dragons are post-human!" Barnes shouted over the radio as he turned around and continued to chase the Deadly Nadder as it tried to shake him off

"What?! How?!" Samantha asked

"I don't know! Just waste them!" Barnes replied

"Wait! Don't!" Carville shouted, "The unarmored ones have mind control collars on them, they might be trying to use them for meat-shields!"

"%$#$, okay follow the procedures we followed during the First War while killing the armored ones!" Barnes replied

"The Night Fury is coming back!" Henderson shouted over the radio as the Roman post-human Night Fury charged up another shot and knocked out another Powell as another wave of Roman and Blackwater soldiers renewed their attack on the hill

"I'm going after that damn Night Fury!" Barnes shouted over the radio as two squadrons of USN and USMC fighters joined the fight while Barnes broke off from pursuing the Deadly Nadder to chase after the Night Fury as it charged up another shot while it came back around for another attack on the hills

"Hey pick on someone in your own species!" Barnes roared to the other post-human Night Fury as he shot a plasma blast into it's bath, seemingly catching him by surprise and making him release his plasma blast prematurely before he looked straight at Barnes

"I was hoping I would watch one of your attention." The Night Fury said to Barnes telepathically before roaring and charging at Barnes, who dodged the Roman, who immediately began charging up another plasma blast as he came back around before shooting at Barnes, who shot out his own plasma blast which met it halfway and exploded

"Didn't know I could do that." Barnes thought to himself as the Roman charged at him and Barnes once again dodged him, but this time chasing after him and charged up a plasma blast while aiming for the Roman's exposed tail flaps as he performed evasive maneuvers to

prevent Barnes from getting a clear shot, but before he could a pair of bolas fired from a launcher on the ground wrapped around him causing him to lose control and crash on the ground with the force of the impact knocking out his armor's power

"Dammit!" Barnes shouted as he struggled to free himself as the Roman Night Fury landed nearby and approached him

"I think in all this chasing around I forgot to introduce myself, I am General Aemilius Casca of the Praetorian Guard." The Roman said to Barnes as he approached him, "And I'm guessing you must be General Barnes."

Barnes snorted

"If you're going to kill me, just do it." He said to him

"Kill you? Not with the price that Gene Corp has been offering for the capture of you and your men." He replied, but before General Casca could do anything to Barnes, he was attacked by Hookfang and Snotlout who were both clad in powered NBC suits as the other riders landed and started freeing Barnes from the Bolas while Casca escaped Hookfang and took off into the air

"You're letting him get away!" Barnes shouted to the riders as Casca disappeared into the night sky as formations of Russian airlifters filled the night skies dropping paratroopers and light tanks while the other Roman post-humans began to retreat from the battle as Russian jet fighters approached

"I know he is, but we can't leave you here like this." Astrid replied as she used a knife to cut through the rope connecting the bolas together

Barnes sighed as Samantha and Anna landed nearby and ran to him

"Barnes!" Samantha cried

"I'm fine Sam..." Barnes replied as Samantha began to nudge him with her snout and like him as the other post-human dragons began to land and form a perimeter as the remaining Roman soldiers and praetorians retreated as more Marines and British Soldiers arrived

"Who was that dad?" Anna asked him

"He said his name was Aemilius Casca." He replied as Astrid's knife finally cut through the rope, freeing him and allowing him to stand up, "Did any of you manage to free any of those mind controlled dragons?"

"Only six, but only one is in a good enough state to talk, the others are too shocked and to make matters worst the one that can speak doesn't know a word of English." Wensky replied

Barnes sighed

"See if you can find a interrupter, I want to see if we can get information off of him or her about Casca." He said to him

"Yes sir." Wensky replied, "But what should we do now?"

Barnes looked back at the hill where the poison gas was now starting to dissipate

"We've got a lot of dead and wounded that need to be moved, so I guess we should start there." He said to him

**APMSF Headquarters **

**Two Hours Later **

Reaper was with Paxton and Smict were in a conference room as Conrad reported to them about the chemical weapons attacks on the Berserker Home Island through a hologram

"According to all the reports we've received from the survivors the primary agent that was used in the attacks were sulfuric mustards, more largely known by it's nickname, mustard gas." Conrad said to them

"What about casualties?" Reaper asked him

"Current reports are showing that the 26th MEU has had it's manpower reduced to almost 75% and the 22nd to 88%. The Berserkers were hit more heavily since they didn't have any NBC gear and we're guessing a causality rate of at least 98% including Dagur." He replied

"Mother of god." Paxton said

"What about the Roman post-human dragons?" Reaper asked Conrad

"Barnes has reported that they're apparently a part of the Praetorian Guards that attacked the Marines after the chemical attacks and are led by a post-human Night Fury by the name of Aemilius Casca. He's also reported that they were using mind-controlled post-human dragons as meat-shields for their main force, they've also liberated some of these dragons, but are currently unable to get intel out of them since most of them are suffering from shock and none of them know or speak English." He replied

"Judging from the studies I did on the Roman Empire during my West Point days, I'd guess they're probably slaves or prisoners." Smict said to them

"That's defiantly possible since Karlson has reported that the Romans have been using slaves to build defenses on Hysteria and as human shields and we've also found a few slaves in the Roman camps on the Berserker Home Island." Conrad replied

"I think we need to seriously start considering escalation." Smict said, "Because the Romans are defiantly going to try gassing us again and maybe they'll do it when we start hitting Rome."

Reaper nodded

"Conrad, do you have any thermobaric weapons with you?" He asked him

"The USAS St. Louis has a few old GBU-43s that have been collecting dust in her cargo bay, don't know if they can still go boom, but I think they defiantly could do some serious damage if they do." He replied

"MOABs? I had no idea we even still had those!" Smict said in surprise

"We have plenty of them since they're the closest thing we can get to a nuclear bomb without the radiation and international backlash." Reaper replied, "We might also have to consider deploying another legion to the Archipelago, can the 22nd and 26th still fight?"

"No, they've lost way too many men and most of their equipment needs to be decontaminated, I thinking about sending them to Berk to recuperate a bit before sending them back home." Conrad said to him

Reaper nodded

"I understand, we'll send replacements with whatever legion we decide to send." He said to him

Conrad nodded before the hologram phased out

"I think I'm going to the Archipelago as well." Reaper said to Paxton and Smict, "I'm not going to sit on the sidelines while my people are being gassed, Conrad you take over the preparations and Paxton just keep the nation calm because there is going to be a lot of pissed off people when this news breaks."

Conrad and Paxton nodded

"I'm not going to try bother talking you out of it because I know it's not going to work." Conrad said to him, "But I strongly advise you stay here because I don't know what we're going to do if we lose you."

"Don't worry about me, I can take care of myself." He replied

**Roman and Blackwater Headquarters **

General Atticus was shouting and scream in anger about the defeat of General Decimus' forces on the Berserker Home Island as Walker talked to one of his deputy commanders

"Years of training and experience WASTED in a single attack!" Atticus screamed

"The commanders of Decimus' Praetorian Guards greatly underestimate their enemies and as result, didn't spend much effort in coordinating their attacks according to our intel." Walker replied, "And not to mention the gas attacks didn't have the results that we hoped for."

"What about your men?! You lost just as many of them and their equipment as we did in that attack and they're much harder to replace than my men are!" Atticus shouted at him

Walker took a deep breath

"It was a necessary sacrifice." He said quietly, "But we still have a war to fight! The battles for Hysteria and Bog Burglar Island are still well under way and we need to start preparing for the arrival of more Coalition forces!"

Atticus sighed and came back to the map table where Berk and the Berserker Home Island were crossed off indicating that the fleets there had been wiped out

"Let just hope the gods are with us." He said quietly

15. Chapter 15

Chapter Fifteen: Aftermath

**Berserker Home Island **

Coalition FOB

Three Hours Later

Jayden Henderson was with his Platoon Commander as he quietly walked past the rows of body bags containing the bodies of the Marines killed in the chemical weapons attack while the rest of the survivors were preparing for their return to Berk

"I can't believe we went from fighting the Outcasts to this..." The Platoon Commander said to Henderson, "I can't help but to blame myself, I'm the one who volunteered us to be deployed here otherwise we'd be still be at Camp Lejeune right. But then it would've been just somebody else's men lying here...I wonder how they're going to make this look nice for the cameras once they lift the press ban."

"Sir you want to keep it down a bit, we do have members of the APMSF here, even if they're dragons." He replied

"I don't care if they hear me or not, these are my men lying dead here because of the Romans and I want to kill every last single one of the *$%$#!$% for it." The Platoon Commander replied

"I'm sure we'll get our chance before it's all over." Henderson replied

"But not soon enough...lets get out of here and let the dead rest." The Platoon Commander said to him

Henderson nodded and left with the Platoon Commander while aboard the Patton, which was hovering overhead, the post-human dragons and dragon riders were being stripped of their armor and equipment so it could be decontaminated and repaired while Barnes received their new objective from General Conrad himself

"As much as I want to send you after General Casca and his dragons, we don't know their current whereabouts so for now you're being sent to the Bog Burglar Islands with the Europeans and Russians where you'll be linking up with a larger European and Canadian task force

along with the 5th Legion and your dad." Conrad said to Barnes

"What about the Berserkers?" He asked him telepathically

"There is not much else we can do for them and most of the remaining ones are packing their bags to go with the Marines to Berk." He replied, "And to tell you the truth, they're probably going to be better off staying there since what I've seen this island doesn't have much of anything."

"Doubt Stoick is going to be happy about having more mouths to feed." Barnes said to him

"I've already talked to Stoick and your dead about it and we've promised him that we're going to help them." He replied, "So have you gotten anything from the those slave dragons your freed?"

"We're still working on breaking the language barrier, but it doesn't help that most of them are scared to death of us." Barnes said

Conrad nodded while in the cargo bay, Calvin and Sheva were taking care of both Emily and the freed dragons while Wensky and Whitman, a German Deadly Nadder tried to get information from a Germanic Zippleback

"I barely understand a word they're saying Adam, their version of German is much different from mine." Whitman said to him

Wensky sighed before looking at the Gallic Gronckle that Calvin was tending to

"I guess we're going have to get a expert then." He said, "Unless...Calvin! Has your dad taught you any German?"

Calvin looked up at Wensky

"He has, but not very much." He replied

"That will have to do, get over here and I want to know if you can understand anything this guy is saying." Wensky said to him

"Sure, but I doubt I'm going to have anymore luck than Whitman." He replied

"We'll at least give it a shot." Wensky said as Calvin approached them and the Zippleback before Calvin asked it something in German

"What did he just say?" Wensky asked Whitman

"I told to him start from the beginning." Calvin replied as both heads of the Zippleback continued to speak and by the time he stopped, Calvin was speechless

"What is it Calvin?! What did he say?" Wensky asked him

"He said that the Romans attacked his village in the middle of night, capturing him and his family as they slept in their home and then took them and the others they captured to a camp in the mountains ran

by their allies, who then turned them into dragons." He replied, "He hasn't seen his family since they put the special collar on him."

"A camp?! As in a concentration camp?!" Wensky asked him

"I'm afraid so sir unless my translation is off." He replied

"How large was this camp?" Wensky asked Calvin, who then translated it for the Zippleback

"He said it was twice the size of the village and part of it was hidden inside a mountain which was where they turned them into dragons." Calvin said, "He also said they've heard rumors about this camp and others like it before the Roman attack."

"Others? As in there more than one?" Wensky asked him

Calvin nodded

"BARNES! GET IN HERE!" Wensky shouted to Barnes, who then came into the cargo bay with Conrad

"What is it? Have you broken the barrier?" Conrad asked him

"We didn't, but Calvin here did. Calvin I want you to repeat what he told you to them." He replied

Calvin nodded before repeating the Zippleback's story to Barnes and Conrad with his translation collar

"Are you sure for certain that is exactly what he said to you?" Barnes asked him after Calvin was finished

Calvin nodded

"They've built entire god damn camps around turning people into dragons, I can't believe this." Conrad said to him, "Son I want you to tell that man that we're going to find his family and make sure those responsible for this pay for it."

Calvin nodded and translated it for the Zippleback while Barnes snorted in agreement with the General

"Isn't this Karlson's son?" Conrad asked Barnes, who nodded

"Well I hope he's proud of him." Conrad said

Isle of Berk

Stoick entered the Village Jail where two Hooligan Warriors armed with captured Blackwater rifles were guarding over Alvin in his cell

"Was wondering when you were going to show your face here." Alvin said to Stoick with ignorant smirk

"Be lucky I didn't let those Americans shoot you on the spot Alvin." He replied, "You're going to pay for what you've done."

Alvin laughed chillingly

"You've always been the righteous one Stoick." He said to him, "I guess that's what you didn't throw your runt of a son to the wolves."

Stoick tightened his fists in anger

"How dare you speak of my son like that!" Stoick growled, pounding his fists on the iron bars of the cell door while Alvin continued to laughed as the Guards tried to pull Stoick away

"Stop it Stoick, he's toying with you!" One of the Guards shouted to Stoick

Stoick took a deep breath and shook off the guards

"I swear if we find that you had anything to do with this war I will not hesitate to give you back to the Americans because I doubt they'll show you any mercy if what I've heard about them is true." Stoick said to him

"We'll just have to see about that." Alvin replied as Stoick stormed out where Gobber and Spitelout were waiting for him

"How are our defenses?!" Stoick asked them

"We've managed to salvage a few field guns from the remains of the Blackwater camp along with plenty of weapons and ammunition which we have distributed amongst the men and we've improved much of our defenses around the village." Spitelout replied

"Good, I want to be ready if the Romans show up wanting a fight, what about gas masks?" Stoick asked them

"The Americans are giving us their extras and we've also managed to recover plenty of them from the Blackwater camp, but I putting my trust in the American ones more." Gobber replied

Stoick nodded as three U.S Navy fighters flew in formation over the village, most of which was still in ruin from both the Outcast Invasion and the Roman air raid

"Gods help us." Stoick thought to himself

USAS Farmington

APMSF 5**th**** Legion **

In Route to Bog Burglar Islands

Reaper was sitting on top of the turret of Megathon tank as he reviewed a map of the Bog Burglar Islands with General Horowitz

"Judging by these maps, maneuvering on these islands with tanks are going to be a bitch due to the lack of solid ground." Horowitz said to Reaper

"I expected as much." He replied, "But it won't be a problem for those UGADs."

"I can't wait to see those tearing apart one of those antiques the Romans call a tank." Horowitz said to him with a evil laugh

"Neither can I." Reaper said to him, "But this will still be largely a infantry battle, but lucky for us like our enemy, we don't have to worry about trench foot since our armor is designed to prevent it. Otherwise it would've been a major concern here."

"Yeah...still would've preferred a place where we could use our tanks." He replied, "But thank god for those UGADs if they work like Stryker said they did in that email."

"So any word from your son and his guys?" He asked Reaper

"They're still on the Berserker Home Island having their equipment decontaminated, we'll probably already be fighting on these islands by the time they get there." He replied

"I just hope we don't run into their damn dragons, can't a Deadly Nadder's fire burn through tank armor at close range?" Horowitz asked him

"That's what I've heard, but I do know from experience that a well placed full-charged shot from a Night Fury can do some serious damage to a tank if they hit a weak spot." He replied, "And a Monstrous Nightmare can probably kill one too if it lays some of it's saliva onto the engine compartment."

"But they still have to get pretty damn close, which is pretty hard to do with one of our tanks." Horowitz asked him

"But not impossible and those guys are probably crazy enough to get that close." He replied

Fort Sinister

Atticus and Walker were planning the defense of their holdings on Hysteria when a Roman Soldier ran into the room

"Sir! General Casca and his dragons are approaching!" The Roman Soldier shouted

"What?! They survived?!"Atticus shouted as he and Walker ran out of the command center as General Casca landed

"I apologize for not contacting you earlier my liege, but I didn't want to risk the Americans tracking us here." Casca said to them with his translation collar

"Very good." Walker replied, "Then I'm sure you've heard about Decimus' death."

Casca sadly nodded

"And then his cowardly second-in-command surrendered without a second thought and we haven't heard anything since." Atticus replied, "But I'm grateful you and your men survived."

"Thank you, but unfortunately we failed to capture any of the

Coalition dragons although I almost did capture their general, but I was thrown off him by the Viking dragon riders." Casca said to him, "But good news is that our casualties were light, although the Americans did manage to free some of our slaves."

"That's good, because you and your men are a lot harder to replace than those slaves. But you'll be getting a second chance against the 502nd soon enough as they only have two places left to strike now, Hysteria and the Bog Burglar Islands." Walker replied

"What about the dragons serving alongside the American stormtroopers on Hysteria?" Casca asked him

"We'll worry about them later, for now we're going to take out the 502nd's dragons." He replied

The Isle of Hysteria

Hysteric Village

APMSF 1**st**** Legion **

Karlson and Tesla were flying over a advancing tank column in the village as a heavy VTOL flew past them carrying a GBU-43 Massive Ordnance Air-Blast(MOAB) before dropping it over a Roman position that it completely annihilated when it exploded

"Boom mother *%$%er!" The Pilot of the Heavy VTOL shouted over the radio as he flew back to the USAS St. Louis

"I forgot how big of a explosion those damn things make." Tesla said to Karlson as the mushroom cloud rose from the crater

"They wouldn't call it the mother of all bombs if it didn't Tesla." He replied, "I can't believe it took chemical weapons being used to get Reaper to come here."

"I just hope the kids are okay." Tesla said to him

"They're on a airship Tesla, they're just fine." He replied, "I'm more worried about them catching whatever Emily has."

"The doctors said it was just food poisoning Karl, I doubt they can catch that from here." Tesla said to him

"The doctors could be wrong! They've been wrong before like the one who said Calvin was a girl!" He replied

"That's because that doctor couldn't tell the difference between a female and male dragon. We should've waited to have our kids while the dragon riders were still helping Barnes and Samantha, but no you insisted we waited until AFTER they're gone so we can raise them ourselves." Tesla said to him

"And they're turning out just fine, thank you very much!" He replied

"Are you guys seriously arguing about your kids up there?!" A APMSF Tank Commander shouted at them over the radio

"Why do you care?!" Karlson shouted back at him with his translation collar

"He's right though, we shouldn't be talking about Calvin and Sheva here because we don't who can be listening right now." Karlson said to Tesla who nodded

"Yeah I guess we got carried away." She replied

"Hostiles!" A APMSF Officer shouted over the radio as gunfire broke out on the ground below as Roman soldiers taking cover in a burnt down building fired upon the APMSF armored column and it's infantry escorts

"About time!" Karlson roared as he and Tesla dove down to join the fight

Rome

Yates was just leaving his meeting with the Roman Emperor when he was greeted by one of his generals

"What's happened now?" Yates asked him

"General Decimus' army has been wiped out by Coalition Forces after a failed counter-attack using chemical weapons." He replied

"Wait?! Did you just say he used chemical weapons?!" Yates asked him

"Yes sir, the attacks managed to inflict severe casualties on the Coalition and Berserkers, but were not enough to ensure a victory." He replied

"Who authorized the use of those weapons?! Because I sure in hell didn't!" Yates asked him

"General Walker upon request from General Decimus." He replied, "He also authorized the deployment of General Casca's Guards."

"Wait, so the Coalition knows that we have both chemical weapons and dragons?!" Yates asked him

The General nodded

"American forces have also landed on Hysteria and are starting to inflict severe casualties on General Ovicula's forces." He said to Yates

Yates sighed

"Well...how well did Casca and his men perform?" He asked him

"Admirably, although they failed to inflict any casualties on the 502nd, who in turn failed to inflict any on his men besides capturing a few of the slave dragons." He replied

"Well at least there is some good news, but I want General Walker to be punished severely for this! I told him explicitly that he was not

to use those chemical weapons without my authorization." Yates said to him, "How have the Coalition retaliated to the attacks?"

"Their forces on Hysteria have began to deploy thermobaric weapons, possibly MOABs and we've been receiving reports from our agents still home side that the Coalition is preparing for more deployments possibly on the Bog Burglar Islands." He replied

"Who is commanding our forces here?" Walker asked him

"Brigadier General Cassius Gracchus and his army is the smallest force in the invasion." He replied

"I guess that means he doesn't have a chance in hell of winning then?" Yates asked him

He nodded

"Do you think he'll surrender?" He asked him

"I'm afraid I don't know, he was one of General Atticus' main opponents in the race to get put into the leading position of the invasion and although he's a competent commander, he has been know for his...radical political views." He replied

"Great..." Yates said to him, "How long will it be until we can get reinforcements to the Archipelago?"

"Not soon enough, by the time our second wave gets there, the Coalition is going to be deployed in full strength and at that point we'll have no chance of changing the tide of this." He replied

"I see, we might have to consider scrapping the operation if it keeps going this way because we're going to need all the help we can get to hold off the counter-attack." Yates said to him

The General nodded

"A damn shame really, if we could capture the Archipelago, we would get access to it's wide variety of dragon species for Project Zeus." Yates continued, "But sacrifices have to be made."

"Sir I would also like to suggest another option that one of my junior officers suggested that we take." The General said to Yates

"And what is that?" He asked him

"We abandon our positions on Hysteria and Fort Sinister and use those forces to launch another attempt to invade Berk which to tell you the truth, is a lot more defensible than Hysteria or the Bog Burglar Islands." He replied, "And it will also put a large dent in the logistics of the American forces that were already in the Archipelago when our invasion began."

"Tempting...but I'll have to think about it." Yates said to him, "On the other hand, you focus on making sure that idiot Walker gets what he deserves."

The General nodded

16. Chapter 16

Chapter Sixteen:** Attack of the Hell Jumpers **

**The Bog Burglar Islands **

Early the next day â€“ **day three of the Archipelago Wars **

The plasma cannons of the USAS Farmington blazed away at the Roman positions beneath it in the bog to make a suitable landing for the VTOLs of the APMSF 5th Legion as they began their deployment while inside the Farmington's hanger bay, Reaper and Horowitz were boarding the VTOL that was carrying a Stormtrooper squad as well as two of the four Unmanned Ground Attack Drones(UGADs)

"Are we sure that these things are safe?" One of the Stormtroopers asked Reaper as he looked back at the UGAD, "Because they look like something from the Terminator movies."

"Don't worry corporal, it's not going to go rogue on us and destroy the world in nuclear fire, it's a drone just like the Chimera which means there is still a person behind the controls somewhere." Horowitz replied as the UGAD looked down at him

"Scared?" The UGAD's Operator said through the Drone's speaker

"That's enough sergeant, save that stuff for the Romans." Reaper replied

"Sorry, couldn't resist the urge." The UGAD Operator replied as the VTOL Pilot closed the side blast shields before lifting off and flying out of the hangar with two escorting Crows as the Farmington ceased firing so the VTOLs could land in the newly-glassed landing area

"Lets do this!" Another Stormtrooper in the VTOL shouted as it touched down on the ground and opened the blast shields allowing the passengers to dismount

"Let the UGADs take point!" Reaper shouted as the two UGADs disembarked from the VTOL through the back ramp as the Roman soldiers and vehicles that had survived the plasma bombardment began to exchange fire with the 5th Legion

"TANK!" A Stormtrooper screamed as a Roman Mark IV appeared from the treeline firing it's sponson-mounted cannons

"I got it!" One of the UGAD Operators shouted as it charged up it's primary weapon, a light plasma cannon, before firing it at the tank and destroying it completely, leaving nothing but the tracks intact while the nearby Roman soldiers started to focus their fire on the UGAD, but couldn't get through it's personal force-field as the UGAD switched to it's minigun and began to mow the soldiers down as the morale of the remaining Roman soldiers began to break as they started to flee

"They're pulling back!" A APMSF Officer shouted as the Roman Force went into a full retreat with one armored car backing up into a bog and becoming stuck in the mud before it was taken out with a ATGM fired by a gunship

"Somebody contact the Farmington and our Allies and tell them that we've secured our LZ!" Horowitz shouted, "So when is the 502nd getting here?"

"Last time I heard they had a ETA of at least an hour!" Reaper replied

**Somewhere between the Bog Burglar Islands and the Berserker Home Island **

502**nd**** Special Operations Fighter Squadron **

USAS Patton's Hangar Bay

Barnes and Wensky greeted Polkovnik Titov and General-Polkovnik Travkin as they disembarked from the VTOL that had carried them from their flagship to discuss the plans for assaulting the Roman force on the Main Bog Burglar Island

"Where's Karlson? I thought he and his wife were with you?" Titov asked Barnes

"They broke off and took the 1st Legion with the rest of our task force to Hysteria." He replied with his translation collar, "So it's just us and the dragon riders now."

Titov and Travkin nodded

"So have you gotten anything of use from those Roman dragons you got?" Travkin asked him

"They're not Roman, they're slaves that they were using for meat-shields and there's a language barrier we're still having problems getting through so no." He replied, "But we do know that Gene Corp and Blackwater are running camps in Europe where they're people into dragons in mass."

"We've already heard that bit." Titov said to him, "But for now we need to take out the Romans and Blackwater here before the we and the Vikings are added to those people."

Barnes nodded

"As you probably already know, the 5th Legion has made landfall in bogs north of the village and are going to link up the Bog Burglars before assaulting the village from there while the Europeans and Canadians are planning to assault the village directly after their fleet finishes transitioning in." He said to the Russian Officers, "Our current plans are to land in the bog east to the village and assault it from there and link up with the Euro-Canadian Task Force and 5th Legion in the village center."

"How well is the village defended?" Travkin asked them

"Most of the Roman forces on the island are currently fighting

against the 5th Legion and Bog Burglars in the northern bogs, but drone reconnaissance is showing that they've left several battalion-sized units to defend the village with some heavy weapons support along with the support of their naval artillery." Wensky replied

"I'm not really fond of the idea of sending my men into a battle where they're possibly going to be shelled by enemy warships, maybe we should wait for the European-Canadian Fleet to engage the Roman fleet before we move in?" Travkin asked them

"Well that is the plan." Barnes replied

"What about Praetorians?" Titov asked

"As far as we've seen there are none of them on the island, but that doesn't mean they're not there." Wensky replied

**Bog Burglar Islands **

**American Assembly Area **

**Sometime Later **

As the sounds of battle continued to echo from various places across the bog Reaper and Horowitz were meeting with Big Boobied Bertha for the first time after she and a band of her warriors were discovered by a recon team

"About time you Americans showed up! Where were you three days ago when all this started?" Bertha shouted at Reaper and Horowitz as she slammed her fists into the map table that Reaper and Horowitz had been standing around and broke it in half

"The Romans' and Blackwater's attacks caught us off guard too Bertha." Reaper replied, "We just only got here a few hours ago and my son and his men have been fighting on Berk and the Berserker Home Island."

"Where's your daughter?" Horowitz asked her

"The Romans have captured her and they're holding her and many others of my tribe in the village hall which they've turned into a prison." She replied

"How many people do you have left?" Reaper asked her

"Only 18, but there are others scattered across the bogs." She replied

"We'll send more teams out to find as many of them as we can and we'll give to you the weapons we've captured from the Romans to even out the odds." Horowitz said to her, "It's the most we can do for you right now."

"When are you planning to retake our village?" She asked them

"Soon, we're just waiting for the Euros and Canadian task that is helping us to start their attack on the Roman fleet." Reaper replied

"How long is that going to take?" She asked him

"Only half an hour." He replied

"Sir we got Canadian airlifters and faster movers coming in from the south!" A APMSF Officer shouted

"Airlifters? I had no idea the Canadians were planning for an airdrop." Horowitz said, "Where are they heading?"

"Directly to the village." The Officer replied, "Might be the hell jumpers, this seems like their kind of op."

"Hell jumpers?" Bertha asked

"Sir, we've also got an report that one of our fighter squadrons have made contact with the USAS Patton and 502nd and they're within attack range." The APMSF Officer said to Reaper

"Order them to go ahead and move in, the hell jumpers are going to some support." He replied

**USAS Patton **

The alarms in the hangar began to wail as the post-human dragons and dragon riders flew out of the hangar followed by the F-45s

"So why the change in plans?" Astrid asked Barnes over the radio

"The Canadians have decided to launch a surprise airborne assault on the village and my dad wants us to support them!" He replied, "We're also to take control of the Bog Burglar Village Hall because that is where the Romans are a lot of Bog Burglars prisoner including their chieftain's daughter!"

"Camicazi?! How did they capture her out of all people?!" Astrid asked

"Who knows?!" Barnes replied

"What about the Russians?" Fishlegs asked him before a formation of Russian attack jets flew over them, "Never mind!"

"Well I guess this is better than landing in a bog!" Vasili shouted

"So who are the Canadians exactly? We've heard you talk about them, but never actually met one." Astrid asked the post-human dragons

"They're one of the minor members of the Coalition and our northern neighbor, they've been good allies with us for a while now."Barnes replied, "They used to be part of Britain and France, but that's ancient history for us."

"Why did Britain and France control part of your continent?" Astrid asked him

"It's a long and complicated story." He replied, "Save those questions for my dad though, history is his thing."

"I guess you and your dad get along a lot better now?" Astrid asked him

"You can say that..." He replied as Samantha snorted

"There's the Bog Burglar Islands!" Fishlegs shouted as the shoreline of the Bog Burglar Island became visible in the distance

Bog Burglar Village Hall

Camicazi was sitting on the crowded stone floor of the Bog Burglar Village against the wall with shackles around her ankles as she watched a Roman Guard pass her and her fellow captured Bog Burglars when the Roman anti-air gun batteries outside the entrance started to fire as the Roman guards started to speak in a mixture of excited and fearful Latin before breaking out into a open state of panic when a bomb fell onto one of the AA guns and exploded making two of the Guards close the door and quickly started to block it with chairs and tables

"Looks like the Americans are finally showing up." A Bog Burglar whispered as there was another explosion that silenced the other anti-air guns outside as the sounds of small arms fire began to echo through the doors as the Roman guards moved one of their machine guns into position to cover the door when a jet flew over the village hall

"No that didn't sound like any of the American jets we saw in the last war, this is somebody different." Another Bog Burglar replied before a Roman Soldier shouted to them to be quiet and made a threatening motion with his rifle as some Roman Soldiers outside the Hall started to beat on the doors and screamed for their comrades inside to let them in as the guards reluctantly refused before the soldiers were finally silenced by automatic gunfire as the crew of the Roman machine gun began to fire through the door in a panic, punching numerous holes through it and tearing apart the crudely made barricade before it finally stopped firing as the crew rushed to reload the machine gun as the Roman Officer commanding the guards rebuked them for firing without his consent before one of the doors were cracked opened and several small objects were thrown in

"Here have some of these you wankers!" A Voice shouted in a strange accent before the door closed as the Roman Guards panicked as the Bog Burglars ducked before the stun grenades went off creating a loud bang and flash of light that incapacitated the guards near the door as several soldiers wearing kevlar wingsuits carrying assault rifles rushed in as the remaining guard threw down his weapon and held up his hands as he shouted and scream as one of the soldiers came up to him

"Oh would you shut up!" The Soldier said as he smacked the guard in the face with the butt of his rifle, knocking him to the ground as Camicazi and the nearby Bog Burglars stood up and cheer

"Area cleared!" Another Soldier shouted, "Now somebody find the bloody keys for these shackles!"

"Who are you guys?" Camicazi asked the Soldier

"We're friends of the Americans." He replied as one of the Soldiers received the keys for the shackles from the unconscious Roman Officer

"Found the keys!" The Soldier shouted as he threw the keys to the Soldier Camicazi spoke to

"Hold still." He said to her as he unlocked the shackles

"Colonel we've got incoming enemy armor from the harbor!" A Officer shouted to him

"How many?" He asked him

"Four light tanks, two heavies, and six armored lorries!" The Officer replied

"Do we have any AT?" He asked him

"Negative, but the second wave is coming and they should have some in their supply crates!" He replied

"What's their ETA?" The Soldier asked him

"20 to 30 minutes at the least." He replied

"That's too long!" The Soldier said before he looked at Camicazi

"I know your people captured plenty of weapons from Blackwater during the First War and brought them back with them, did any of them bring back rocket launchers?" He asked her

She nodded

"We placed all the guns we brought back in a cache on the other side of the village, but I don't know if it's still there." She said to him

"Well we're going have to take the chance, can you show us where it is?" He asked her

Camicazi nodded

"Good." The Soldier said before helping Camicazi up onto her feet and looking back at the Officer, "Get your men and come with us."

"Yes sir." He replied as Camicazi picked up the rifle of one of the unconscious Roman soldiers

"Never seen a gun like this before, but I guess it'll have to do." She said

"It's an old bolt-action rifle, back in our world the only thing those things are good for anymore are hunting." The Soldier replied

"Well say that to the Romans." She said to him, "Now are we going or what?"

As Camicazi led the Canadian Hell Jumpers to the Bog Burglar weapon cache, the APMSF 1st Legion was still fighting it's way through the Roman defenses in the bogs with the UGADs at the spearhead

"Man those UGADs are really running the show!" An APMSF Officer shouted as a UGAD used it's plasma cannon to annihilate a machine gun nest

"Just keep pushing forward! They can't do it all alone!" Horowitz shouted

"I beg to differ." The APMSF Officer replied as a Roman Soldier charged one of the UGADs with his bayonet and tried to stab it in the right leg joint only for the bayonet blade to break as it hit the kletonium armor while the UGAD continued on, ignoring the Roman as he looked at his broken bayonet and cursed in Latin before retreating back into his foxhole where he then surrendered to a squad of APMSF Stormtroopers , but nearby another UGAD was wading through some shallow water when it's right leg was suddenly crippled in an explosion that came from beneath it's foot causing the UGAD to topple over onto it's side

"UGAD Three is down! I repeat, UGAD Three is down! We've got landmines!" A Operator of one of the Other UGADs shouted

"Landmines?! LANDMINES?! You've got to be *%$#ing kidding me!" Reaper shouted, "I *%$%ing hate minefields! Where the hell are our EOD teams?!"

"They're coming up now! UGADs, maintain your current positions!" Horowitz replied, "So much for a easy push! Infantry take point and storm those Roman positions!"

"Yes sir!" An APMSF Officer replied before leading his men forward

"What should we do know about UGAD Three?" Horowitz asked Reaper

"Well we can't leave there, so we'll have get a recovery vehicle to pull out after the landmines are cleared out!" He replied, "But for now assign a squad to watch over it, #$#$ing Romans."

"I think this is the first time we've encountered a minefield since the Clan Wars." Horowitz said to him

"Just get the EODs teams up here to clear out the mines so the UGADs can move up." He replied as the 502nd and dragon riders arrived in the airspace over the Bog Burglar Village and immediately began to take fire from Roman anti-air guns and infantry

"You guys continue onto the village hall! We'll take care of these guys!" Ramirez shouted over the radio before he and the other F-45s dove down to attack the anti-air guns

"Roger that Dice-2." Barnes replied

"Hey Barnes! I think the Canadians beat us to the village hall!"

Astrid shouted to him as she pointed down to the hall which was being fortified by the hell jumpers and the recently freed Bog Burglars

"Lets get down there and see if they need our help!" He replied before he began to descend to the village hall behind the incomplete fortifications where he was greeted by an Canadian Officer

"Are you General Barnes?" The Officer asked him

Barnes nodded

"I'm Sergeant Alexis William, 5th Hell Jumper Brigade." The Officer said to him

"Wheres your commander?" Barnes asked as Wensky landed next to him with the dragon riders while the others continued to circle overhead

"Some Viking girl is taking him and a squad to their weapon cache to get anti-tank weapons to help repel the Roman armor that's coming this way." The Officer replied, "But I'm guessing you can help us with that too."

Barnes nodded

"Where is this armor?" He asked him

"Last time I heard they're about half-way here, those damn Roman tanks move like snails." He replied, "But I guess that also makes them even more easier to crack open if you have the weapons to do it."

"You guys don't come with AT?" Wensky asked him

"Hell no, these wingsuits can't fly with that kind of weight." He replied, "But we have a second wave coming in with heavier weapons."

"ARMORED CAR!" A Canadian Soldier screamed as a Roman armored car sped into view and began to fire it's autocannon and coaxial machine gun at the Canadian soldiers and Bog Burglars behind the fortifications before it was taken out by Samantha with a plasma blast

"$%$#ing Romies" Alexis said, "So can you guys take out those damn tanks for us or what?"

Barnes nodded

"Well get to it then, I'll tell the colonel that you stopped by whenever they get back." He said to him

"Come on guys lets go cut open some more Roman tin cans." Barnes said to Wensky before they took off to rejoin the others in the air

"So what do we do now?" Samantha asked Barnes

"The Canadians need us to take out some Roman tanks for them." He replied

"That should be easy." Jones said

Sometime later, Camicazi and the Hell Jumpers were returning to the Village Hall from the weapons cache with their recently acquired AT weapons

"These should be more than enough to take care of anything the Romans can throw at us." The Canadian Commander said as he handed the AT weapon he was carrying to another Hell Jumper when another Canadian Officer approached him

"Sir, the 502nd were here just a minute before you arrived and they left to take out the tanks." He said to him

"Figures, so I guess all that was for nothing then, but at least we have some heavy firepower now." He replied

"What should we do now sir?" The Officer asked him

"We hold position and wait for reinforcements." He replied

"Yes sir." The Officer said to him

"Also what is the progress of the 5th Legion's advance? " He asked him

"It's doing well, but they've been forced to slow down, apparently the Romans have mined the bogs." He replied

"Great...why can't they use that flying battleship of theirs to fly in reinforcements?" The Commander asked him

"It's too busy blowing up Roman warships." He replied

"Figures..." The Commander said, "Continue building fortifications, I want to be ready if the Romies try to launch another attack us."

"Yes sir." The Officer replied

**Fort Sinister **

General Atticus and the newly appointed commander of the Blackwater invasion forces, General Moretti were in their command center as they studied the situation of the Bog Burglar Islands

"Surprisingly, General Gracchus has so far held out, but I doubt that's going to last much longer." Moretti said to Atticus

"Should we send reinforcements?" He asked him

"No, it's inevitable that General Gracchus is going to be defeated, so why reinforce him?" He replied

Atticus sighed

"I'd hate to see his forces go to waste though, we've lost too many as it is already." He said to Moretti, "And I've already come to accept the fact it's only going to get worst as more and more

Coalition forces arrive and now we have three major Coalition fleets, another American airship, and a APMSF Stormtrooper Legion here with more no doubly on the way. If we lose Bog Burglar Island, this campaign is over."

"I agree, it's obvious to me that there is no we're going to win this which is why we're going ahead with the back-up plan." He replied

"The back-up plan?" Atticus asked him

"We order General Ovicula to disengage and pull his forces out of Hysteria and then use them to launch another strike on Berk, which is no doubly much less defended than it was earlier." He replied

"What about General Gracchus' forces?" Atticus asked him

"It's too late for them, but hopefully he keeps fighting long enough to keep them distracted." He replied

"Then what do we do after if we capture Berk?" Atticus asked

"We hold onto it until command can send a larger fleet to reinforce us or keep the Coalition tied down long enough for them to prepare to a plan to defend Europe." Moretti replied, "More likely it's going to be the latter."

Atticus sighed

"I can't really say I like that plan much, but I guess it's better than pulling out and letting the Coalition use this Archipelago as a base to exact it's revenge on Rome." He said to him, "I'll give the order to General Ovicula, I doubt he's going to be happy to hear it, but he's a good soldier. I just hope General Gracchus' sacrifice is not going to be in vain."

"I hope so too." Moretti replied

17. Chapter 17

Chapter Seventeen**: First Strike **

**Bog Burglar Island **

502**nd**** Special Operations Fighter Squadron**

"There they are!" Astrid shouted through the radio as she pointed out the column of Roman tanks and infantry advancing toward the Canadian positions

"I'll go first!" Barnes shouted before he began to charge up a plasma blast before he down down at the leading Roman tank and released the fully charged plasma blast before climbing back up into air as the blast struck the Roman tank and crippled it as Samantha followed up by destroying the last tank in the column and trapping the remaining Roman tanks as the other post-human dragons and dragon riders descended upon them

"Good work Sam!" Barnes shouted to Samantha over the radio

"Thanks!" She replied as Leon, Anna, and Zoey took turns knocking out Roman tanks with the other post-human dragons as they struggled to maneuver in the narrow streets of the village while the infantry failed to do any damage to the attackers due to their armor

"These Romans aren't at a challenge at all!" Snotlout shouted over the radio

"Yeah I have to agree, these ones aren't fighting as good as the ones on the Berserker Island." Vasili replied, "They must be auxiliary troops of some sort, maybe conscripts."

"Conscripts or not! They're still trying to kill us!" Barnes replied as Wensky crippled the last surviving Roman tank by landing on top of it and set it's engine on fire with his magnesium fire, which easily melted through the thin armor on the armor, and flew off as it's crew began to bail out from the burning vehicle before the ammunition inside started to cook off before detonating, destroying the tank completely

"Holy crap when those things blow, they %$##ing blow big!" Wensky shouted as the surviving Roman infantry scattered in fear

"Okay I think that's last of them! Everybody regroup at the village hall and we'll wait for the 5th Legion!" Barnes shouted into the radio while back in the bogs, the advance of the 5th Legion was now in full motion again as M7 Assault Breacher Vehicles(ABVs) cleared a path through the Roman fields using their mine plows and MICLIC Launchers for the UGADs and their infantry escorts behind them as Reaper and General Horowitz followed

"Thank god for those ABVs." Horowitz replied

"This would be much harder if we were still under fire." Reaper said, "Because the charges those MICLICs use are highly unstable and they have been known to explode in their launchers when a round hits them."

"The scanners are saying we're almost out of the minefield!" The Commander of one of the ABVs shouted over the radio

"Finally! I was starting to get bored with staring at your asses!" A UGAD Operator replied

"Better to stare at our asses than getting one the legs of your precious drones blown off by a mine!" The ABV Commander replied with no response from the UGAD Operator

"After this battle is over, I want your engineers to sweep and scan the entire for anymore minefields, because I doubt this is the only one the Romans have placed out here and I don't want Vikings getting blown up by them after the war is over." Reaper said to Horowitz

"Yes sir." Horowitz replied, "They no doubly have placed a few on Hysteria as well."

"Yeah, but I'm guessing Karlson and Tesla already know that by now." Reaper said to him

"General Horowitz! General Horowitz!" An APMSF Officer behind them shouted as he caught up to them

"What is it colonel?" Horowitz asked the Officer as he caught his breath

"We're receiving reports from General Conrad that the Roman and Blackwater forces on Hysteria are retreating and getting back onto their ships! The Officer replied

"So they're pulling out now?" Horowitz asked him

"That's what General Conrad thinks sir." He replied

"Can the Navy intercept the fleet before it retreats?" Reaper asked him

"Negative, our nearest warships are tied down supporting the 1st Legion's advance and repelling attacks by the local wild dragon population and all of our available aircraft are tied down with other missions." He replied

"Dammit!" Reaper said, "We can't let that fleet escape intact! Tell General Conrad to send it to the bottom as soon as he can!"

"Yes sir!" The Officer replied before heading back to the command post

"Reaper, I hate to the pessimist, but something isn't right with this. They're not going give up on these islands that easily because they know we're going to use them for our counter-strike on Europe." Horowitz said to Reaper

"I know...what do we have on Berk right now?" He replied

"The remnants of the Marine divisions that got gassed on Berserker Island and the few hundred troopers that Conrad left there to help the Hairy Hooligans take care of the remaining cells of Outcasts and maintain order over the prisoners we're keeping there." Horowitz said to him, "You think they'll try attacking there again?"

"It's the only place I can think of, but we can't know for certain. Do we have any spare UAVs on the Farmington?" Reaper asked Horowitz

Horowitz nodded

"Get one in the air and have it to keep track of that fleet, we need to know where it's going." Reaper said to him

"I'll get it done immediately." He replied

IRS Nero

As the main Roman fleet prepared to lift anchor, General Atticus and Moretti were in the command center of their flagship as they reviewed their plans to invade Berk

"According to our intel the Americans have left a single LHD and six

missile destroyers to protect Berk's harbor from a direct assault along with two brigades of infantry and the remains of the Marine divisions that were gassed on Berk." Moretti said to Atticus, "But our biggest worries is that LHD and those destroyers, because one of those destroyers alone carry enough firepower to cripple this fleet before we can get anything close enough to hit it, but we might be able to launch an air attack."

"Much like they did with Aetius' fleet, but even if we manage to catch them off guard casualties will still be considerably high because each of those ships have a full compliment of anti-air weapons and not to mention the fighters and attack helicopters that LHD will be launching." Atticus replied

Moretti nodded

"But there's another problem, none of my aircraft and none of your's can carry anything big enough to damage that LHD enough to sink it, so we're going have go with something more unconventional." He said to Atticus

"Doesn't this LHD ship have some kind of hangar beneath it's main deck where the aircraft and their fuel and ammo are stored?" Atticus asked him

"It does, but it'll be pretty damn hard to get any of our guys in there because the only way in out and of there is a elevator on the main deck." He replied

"Well doesn't it also have a launch bay for the amphibious assault vehicles that the American marines' use?" Atticus asked him

"It does." He replied

"Maybe we can get divers into the ship through there and have them plant charges inside the ship?" Atticus asked him

"It'll be hard, but not impossible and it'll likely be a one way trip because the divers won't be able to remain undetected on the ship." He replied

"Then lets just hope they'll be able to get the bombs planted before they're detected." Atticus said

Moretti nodded, but then he remembered something

"Shit!" Moretti said

"What is it?" Atticus asked him

"I can't believe I didn't think of this! The Americans are no doubly going to be tracking the movements of General Ovicula's fleets with their drones!" He replied

"Can't we just shoot them down?" Atticus asked him

"Most of their drones fly far beyond the reach of any of our anti-air weapons, so we're going have to figure out an alternative way of dealing with them." He replied

"Maybe we should try confusing them? Tell General Ovicula to order his troopships to break off from the rest of his fleet and have them join us while his warships go another way, the Americans will be more than likely to follow his warships than the troopships if they go by themselves!" Atticus said to him

"That could work but it also leaves the troopships without escorts in waters infested by dragons and Coalition warships." He replied, "And there is also a chance they won't fall for it."

"We don't really any other choice unless we want to lose the entire fleet." Atticus said to him

Moretti nodded

"I guess we've got to take the chance...make it happen." He said to him

**Isle of Berk **

Henderson and Bravo Squad were with three other Marine Squads as they helped the Hairy Hooligans and APM Shocktroopers clear out the last remaining cell of Outcasts in the forests, some of which were using firearms

"Where the hell did they get those guns?!" Benjamin shouted as they took cover behind a boulder from incoming fire

"Who knows, there's weapons laying all over the place now!" Jasmine replied, "At least they can't aim for shit!"

"Dragon!" A APM Shocktrooper screamed as a Deadly Nadder with a Outcast riding on it charged at the attacking Americans and Hairy Hooligans before they were both gunned down by a heavy machine gun as an Enforcer tank smashed it's away through the trees and fired a HE round from it's main gun at the Outcasts' positions, blasting a hole in their lines

"Pop smokes and move up!" Henderson shouted as he pulled out a smoke grenade and threw it as Jasmine and Turner did the same, creating a smokescreen that Bravo Squad and the others used to cover their advance as the Enforcer rolled ahead in front of them using it's coaxial machine gun to suppress the surviving Outcasts as the Marines and Vikings entered their position

"Fan out and clear em' out!" A APM Shocktrooper shouted as Stoick and Thornado joined the attack by sonic blasting a group of Outcasts out from of their cover

"Fire in the hole!" A Marine shouted as the remaining Outcasts began to pop up from behind from their cover with their hands raised in the air

"Don't shoot! We surrender!" The Outcast shouted

"Sergeant! Take the prisoners back to the base!" A APM Officer shouted to a Shocktrooper

"Yes sir! All of you are with us! Get moving!" The Shocktrooper shouted as he motioned with his pulse rifle for the Outcasts to start

moving as he and his squad escorted them

"Well at least that's over with!" Benjamin said as he sat down on a nearby rock, "So how is the fighting in the rest of the Archipelago going?"

"Last time I heard the Romans and Blackwater are pulling out from Hysteria while the Roman forces on the Bog Burglar Islands are still fighting." Jasmine replied

"They're pulling out? Well that's good, that means they're calling it quits, which means we're going home soon although I defiantly wouldn't mind having to kill a few more Romans before we left." Hernandez said

"We'll all get our chance soon enough private." Henderson replied

"Not soon enough." Benjamin said, "A lot of my friends died in those gas attacks on Berserker Island."

Bog Burglar Island

502**nd**** SOFS **

Sometime Later

Barnes and Samantha and most of the other post-human dragons and the dragon riders' mounts were using the downtime to rest and let their shot counts replenish as the dragon riders and Canadian Hell Jumpers kept watch

"Hey look who finally decided to show up!" Snotlout shouted as Reaper and Horowitz along with a few Stormtroopers and a single UGAD arrived

"Whoa! What is that thing?!" Ruffnut asked as the dragon riders and Hell Jumpers looked at the UGAD while Barnes and Samantha got up and forward

"It's a UGAD or Unmanned Ground Attack Drone." Barnes replied with his translation collar

"How do you know?" Horowitz asked him

"The guys at Area 51 that developed them made me fight one of an earlier version of them a few months ago and they got pissed off when I used the plasma blades to cut it's legs off." He replied

"It's true, I watched it happen." Samantha said

"Yeah and that's why they added the force fields and they still have not forgiven you for that." Reaper said to them

"They told me to do my worst to it and I did." Barnes replied, "And not to mention that the guy they had operating it was just asking to have his ass kicked."

"Well you could have done that without destroying it!" Reaper said to him

Barnes snorted

"Well anyway, in case if you haven't heard, Blackwater and the Romans are pulling out their forces out of Hysteria." Reaper said to them

"Well that's a good thing right? It means we've won!" Snotlout replied

"It's still too early for that kid because we have every right to believe this could just be a deception to make us put our guard down." Horowitz said to him

"He's not kidding, I've seen people pull off this kind of stunt off before, you fake a retreat, wait until the enemy feels secure and then you turn around and strike back." He replied, "Hell even I've done it a few times myself."

"Which is exactly the point of having that UAV chase after it, but unfortunately they're smart enough to know we're going to be watching and tracking their movements, so they've split their fleet and have sent the troopships in another direction while their warships continue heading East." Horowitz added

"Why would they leave their troopships without escorts?" Barnes asked him, "Could they have another fleet in the area that we don't know about? Because we haven't sunk anything that looked like it could have been a flagship and they surely brought a reserve fleet just in case things went south."

"Then why would they choose now to deploy it?" Astrid asked

"Who knows, but them having another fleet is defiantly a possibility we need to consider because unlike the Gene Corp War, we don't have any spy satellites to provide us constant intel and UAVs can only cover a small area at a time." Reaper replied, "But unfortunately the UAV is currently following the warships and it's going to take some time to divert it to follow the troopships if we can find them now."

"Horowitz, do you think your boys and the Coalition can handle this without our help?" Barnes asked Horowitz, who nodded

"Of course we can, tired of fighting?" He asked him

"No, I think we're going back to Berk." He replied, "Because if they do strike anywhere, it's going to be there because it's the only place they can really strike and do some real harm."

"I'll go with you then, I think we should also recall the 1st Legion as well since Hysteria is pretty well secured now." Reaper said, "Plus all of you could probably use the rest anyway."

"What about the two Euro divisions you have aboard the Patton?" Horowitz asked

"I guess they're going back to Berk with us as well since it'd be waste to deploy them here." Reaper replied

**Isle of Berk **

The Harbor

Stoick was with Gobber at the docks as looked at the American Boston-class Missile Destroyer, USS _Baltimore_ which was guarding the entrance of Berk's harbor while the rest of the small American fleet defending Berk, including the Hornet-class LHD, USS _Hornet_ was anchored inside the harbor

"I still can't wrap my head on how they get those ships to float." Gobber said to Stoick

"Nobody can Gobber, which is why we don't have any." He replied

"Hey if the Romans can do it, we can too Stoick, we just need to find out how to make them float and get the metal to build one." Gobber said

"The Romans can do it because Blackwater showed them how to." Stoick replied, "And their warships are vastly inferior to anything the Americans and their allies have, even the USS Iowa, a ship older than the Roman Empire and it still sunk their ships like they were nothing."

"That brings up another question, why do the Americans still use those things if they have ships like these?" Gobber asked

"Who knows, but their crews seem to be fond of them." Stoick replied

"Well I can't blame them! Who can't be fond of a floating fortress?" Gobber asked, "But why can't they build something bigger and better?"

"Maybe they don't want too?" Stoick replied

"I guess you're right." Gobber said before a massive internal explosion erupted from below the _Hornet's_ flight deck, ripping it open and creating a powerful shockwave that knocked both Stoick and Gobber off their feet and pushed the destroyers away from the LHD as another, but smaller internal explosion erupted near the ship's poop deck(rear), knocking out one of it's CIWC guns

"Gobber! GOBBER!" Stoick shouted as he got up

"I'm alright Stoick, but I think I'm going to need some new undies!" Gobber replied as another internal explosion erupted from the already crippled warship as the surviving American Marines and sailors still aboard began to leap off the ship into the water while it began to slowly sink

"Dear Thor..." Stoick said and seconds earlier in the nearby American FOB, Henderson was on a video phone with his daughter's grandmother, Evie and he had just told her about his part in the Battle of Berserker Island and the gas attacks

"I heard about the gas attacks on the news, but I had no idea you were there!" Evie said to him, "But thank god you're okay, I have no idea what I will do with Ellie if something happened to you!"

"I'm sure you'd figure something out." He replied, "Where is Ellie?"

"She's spending the night with one of her friends from school." Evie said to him when the first explosion erupted from the harbor

"What was that?!"" Evie shouted as both Marines and APM Shocktroopers rushed to the harbor as the other explosions followed

"I think I'm going to end this here Evie!" Henderson replied when Jasmine found him

"Sergeant! The Hornet just went up in smoke!" Jasmine shouted to him

"Hold on!" Henderson replied, "Sorry Evie!"

"Be safe!" Evie shouted as Henderson cut the feed and shoved the video phone back into his rucksack before going with Jasmine to the harbor where the rest of Bravo Squad was standing as they and the other Americans and Vikings watched the burning wreck that used to be the USS Hornet slowly disappear beneath the waves as survivors clung to the wreckage

"We need to get down there and help them!" Henderson shouted as he ran to the entrance to the docks

"Wait up!" Turner shouted as Bravo Squad and several other Marines and Vikings followed him as he took off parts of his armor and gear before diving into the water and swimming to the nearest survivor, a air crewman who was clinging desperately onto an oil-drum

"Are you hurt?!" Henderson asked him

"I think my leg's broke!" He replied

"Well grab onto me and I'll take to you the docks then!" Henderson said to him and the crewman didn't waste anytime to grab onto Henderson as he took him back to the docks where they were both fished out of the water by Stoick and Gobber

"Thank you sergeant!." The Air Crewman said to Henderson as he was taken away by two Corpsman

"What happened?" Henderson asked Stoick

"We don't know, but the explosions came from inside the ship beneath the flight deck!" He replied, "This defiantly isn't a accident Sergeant!"

"Well I can see that!" Henderson shouted as Turner arrived

"Sarge, we have a problem! I just heard from Delta that our platoon commander and his deputy commanders were aboard the Hornet!" He said to Henderson

"What?! Are you saying that they're..." He replied

Turner nodded

"They're gone sir." He said as Snotlout's father, Spitelout climbed onto the deck with a wounded U.S Marine

"This man is saying that the explosions were from bombs planted by divers!" Spitelout shouted

"We...we...we found them just as they were planting the last bomb...but they detonated it and the others before we could get do anything..." The Marine said as a Corpsman started to tend to him

"God dammit...I guess that means Sergeant Callahan is in charge then, where is he?" Henderson asked Turner

"He and Alpha were wiped on out on Berserker Island sir, which means you're now the highest ranking officer in the platoon, which means you're in charge." Turner replied

"Shit...okay first order is to get all these people out of the water!" Henderson shouted before the air raid sirens in the FOB began to wail as formations of Roman and Blackwater aircraft appeared on the horizon

"EVERYBODY OFF THE DOCKS!" Stoick shouted as Roman bi-planes dove down from the horizon and began to strafe one of the _Boston_-class destroyers and dropping bombs on it as Henderson, Stoick, Gobber, and Bravo squad rushed to get off the docks

"So much for going home!" Benjamin shouted as they took cover in a dugout

"How do they sneak up on us like this?!" Turner asked Henderson

"When they took out the Hornet, they must have also took out our radar!" Henderson replied as one of the missile destroyers was struck by two anti-ship missiles, "Looks like they're focusing on the ships!"

"They must be clearing the way for another invasion fleet!" Stoick shouted as another anti-ship missile struck the missile destroyer, crippling it

"Another invasion fleet?!" Jasmine shouted

"The Roman fleet from Hysteria must be coming back around!" Henderson replied

"Well ain't that just perfect!" Hernandez replied as another missile destroyer was crippled by Roman bombs and anti-ship missiles while a unseen Night Fury charged up a shot

"Oh crap...!" Turner shouted as the Night Fury plasma blasted a nearby SAM Launcher, taking it out

"Not them again!" Henderson yelled as the Roman Praetorian dragons joined the fray, attacking the American FOB and ground vehicles

"*%$#ing Romies!" Dean replied as the USS _Baltimore_ took a direct hit to it's main gun by a Roman armor-piercing air-to-ground rocket, crippling the gun

"Where in Odin's name is your air force?!" Stoick asked Henderson

"Who knows, I'm not a fly boy!" He replied as the Roman Night Fury took out another SAM Launcher with a plasma blast

"Shouldn't we be doing something?!" Jasmine asked

"You're right, we should be doing something!" Henderson replied as he looked out of the observation ports of the dugout and saw a few discarded MANPAD launchers in a nearby dugout, "Looks like we've got some AA launchers in that dugout over there! But we're going have to run for it!"

"Anybody have smoke grenades on them?" Turner asked

"I don't!" Dean replied

"Me neither." Henderson said, "So I guess we're going have to do without them! We'll run on three!"

Henderson, Stoick, Gobber, and Bravo Squad prepared to vault of the dugout as Henderson started to count

"One...two...THREE!" He shouted before they all vaulted out of the dugout and sprinted to the other dugout, but went unnoticed by the attacking aircraft and Praetorian dragons as they reached the dugout

"Holy crap I can't believe we made that!" Dean shouted as Henderson grabbed one of the MANPADs and armed it while Benjamin and Hernandez grabbed the others and armed them and switched to laser guidance, which activated it's built-in laser painter

"Lets do this!" Benjamin shouted as Henderson was the first to leave the dugout and crouched as he aimed it at the nearest target, a Roman biplane that was climbing back up into the air after dive bombing one of the missile destroyers

"This is for Berserker Island you *#%*$^*s!" Henderson shouted as he launched the missile at the biplane and used the laser painter to guide it toward the plane, whose pilot didn't notice the missile until it struck his aircraft that the resulting blast disintegrated sending it in bits and pieces down to the Earth while Henderson shouted in triumph as Benjamin fired his MANPAD at a Blackwater aircraft, which deployed flares, but those had little effect on the laser guided missile that struck and crippled it sending it spinning on it went a conclusion course with a derelict catapult tower and both were destroyed in the resulting impact while Hernandez aimed for another Roman biplane as it went down for a strafing run on the FOB and disintegrated it with a direct hit to it's fuselage and all three of them rushed back to the dugout to rearm

"Haha! That was awesome!" Benjamin shouted as he reloaded the launcher

"Don't get cocky now, we still have a long way to go!" Stoick said to him as he and Gobber armed themselves with the other guns stored in the dugout

"Who left all these weapons here unintended?" Jasmine asked

"Who cares?!" Henderson replied as he finished reloading his launcher as a Viking slid into the dugout

"Stoick! Alvin's broken out of the jailhouse!" The Viking shouted to Stoick

"WHAT?!" Stoick shouted

"As if things couldn't get any worst!" Henderson replied, "We'll have to worry about finding him later! We've got other problems right now!"

Stoick nodded reluctantly

"Hey look! I they're starting to bug off!" Dean shouted as the Roman and Blackwater aircraft began to withdraw

"They're not bugging off...they've accomplished their mission." Stoick said as he saw the several tall pillars of smoke swirling from the harbor coming from the burning wrecks of the destroyers and USS _Hornet_, "We've got a long night ahead of us."

"Tell something I don't know." Henderson said to him

**In the Village **

After narrowly escaping from the burning jailhouse, Alvin was out of breath as he took a brief moment to rest while the sound of warfare turned into near silence as fires burned across the island, but his rest was cut short

"Freeze!" An American Officer shouted as he and several other American soldiers surrounded Alvin and aimed their weapons at him, "Put your hands where we can see them!"

Alvin sighed

"Don't you have bigger concerns than me right now?!" Alvin asked them as put his hands into the air, "Plus what harm can I do now? You've probably wiped out my entire tribe by now!"

"Defeated or not, you're still an enemy of the Hairy Hooligans and therefore an enemy of the union!" The American said to him as two soldiers cautiously approached Alvin with their weapons aimed at him

"The union? I thought you were the United States?" Alvin asked him

"What we call our nation is of none of your concern!" The Officer replied as the two soldiers began to handcuff Alvin, "Take him way!"

"Today isn't my day." Alvin thought to himself as the Americans

dragged him away

USAS Patton â€“ In route to Berk

502**nd**** Special Operations Fighter Squadron **

Several Minutes later

Reaper was talking with Aberly Dreher and the commander of the British Infantry division in hangar while the post-human dragons slept when an APM Officer came running into the hangar

"Mr. President, we've just a distress signal from Berk, they've been attacked!" The APM Officer said to Reaper

"How bad?" Reaper asked

"The USS Hornet and her escorts have been...destroyed sir along with most of the ground vehicles and heavy weapons of the ground forces we still have on the island." The Officer replied

"I thought you had a UAV watching that Roman fleet?" Aberly asked Reaper

"We do." He replied

"According to the reports, these were long range ground-based aircraft, possibly coming from airbases in Scandinavia or Ireland." The Officer said

"How much longer until we reach Berk?" Reaper asked

"Four hours at least." The Officer replied

"Tell General Conrad to divert all available aircraft to Berk!" Reaper said to him, "And I want that Roman fleet sent to the bottom of the ocean NOW! I don't care what it takes!"

"Yes sir!" The Officer said as the post-human dragons, who had been awaken by the Officer's shouting got up

"You all know the drill! Get suited up!" Barnes shouted

"This cannot be good for my health..." Vasili said as he lifted himself off the ground

"It never ends..." Reaper thought to himself

**IRS Nero - In Route to Berk **

Atticus and Moretti were celebrating their victory as the troopships from Ovicula's fleet joined theirs as it sailed toward Berk, which was visible on the horizon

"Our pilots are reporting that all the American warships defending Berk have been destroyed along with most of their air defenses and ground vehicles!" Atticus said to Moretti

"How long will it be until we can get troops on Berk?" Moretti asked him

"Within the hour!" Atticus replied

"Good, because we must move quickly as the other Coalition forces in the Archipelago will be quick to respond to our attack!" Moretti said

Atticus nodded

"We'll continue where General Aetius failed, we'll land on Long Beach where I believe the Outcasts tried to flank the Americans and the Hairy Hooligans during their little conflict before we arrived." He said to Moretti

"Are there any Outcasts still left fighting? We could use them to bolster our manpower." Moretti replied

"None that we know of." Atticus said to him

"Shame, they would have given us something to put between our men and the Coalitions' bullets." He replied, "We will proceed with the landings as soon as possible."

18. Chapter 18

Chapter Eighteen: **The Third Battle of Berk â€“ Part One**

**Isle of Berk **

The Long Beach

Sometime after the raids

Several large hovercraft made landfall on the Long Beach, pushing aside the destroyed and abandoned Outcast ships still beached on the shore and crushing the bodies of the dead Outcasts who hadn't been picked up before they stopped and dropped their ramps allowing the Roman and Blackwater soldiers inside them to pour out onto the beach as more hovercraft and landing craft made their way to Berk's shores while in the village, Henderson, Stoick, and Bravo Squad were helping Engineers building barricades to slow their advance while everybody else was retreating to the mountain caves

"I never dreamed that a day will come that we'd be retreating from our village!" Stoick shouted as he helped Henderson throw a large object onto a barricade

"I never thought I'd be retreating at all!" Henderson replied, "But there is no way we're going to be able to-

"HIND!" A Marine shouted as a Blackwater Hind appeared from the night sky and strafed them with it's gun-pods and rockets forcing the Marines and Viking into cover before flying over

"God that was close!" Henderson said as he and Stoick got up

"It's coming back around!" Another Marine shouted as the Hind came back around on to making another strafing run, but it was shot down by a MANPADs before it fired a single shot

"Thank gods!" Stoick said as the burning Hind flew out of the control before crashing in the village in the distance

"Lets get out of here before another one shows up!" Henderson shouted

"I agree!" Stoick replied as they quickly vacated the area

**IRS Nero **

**Offshore **

Atticus and Moretti were on the deck of the Nero using their binoculars to observe the Hairy Hooligan village as Casca and his second-in-command, Domitian Matius, a Stormcutter dragon sat on the roof of the turret behind the two generals

"Dammit they shot it down!" Atticus shouted as they watched the helicopter that Moretti had sent to scout out the Marine and Viking positions and movements in the village crashed after being hit by a SAM

"Just send us already and we'll finish them off!" Domitian shouted with his translation collar

"You'll get your chance soon enough." Moretti replied, "Plus do you really want to end up like that helicopter? And should I also remind you that you are the only one of that species that we have?"

Domitian snorted

"Control yourself Matius..." Casca said to him in dragonese

"I'm tired of waiting, they forced me to sit out on the last fight and I am not going to miss this one." He replied

"And you won't...now just calm down before I make you!" Casca replied

"I like to see you try..." Matius thought to himself

**USAS Patton **

**In Route to Berk **

The post-human dragons, the dragon riders, and their mounts were clad in their armor while Reaper, Aberly, and the British Infantry Commander viewed the situation on Berk via a live feed from a high altitude drone on Reaper's tablet

"Holy crap! Look at all of them!" The British Infantry Commander said to them

"Mr. President, we don't have enough ammunition on this thing to take on a force that large and neither do the forces you have on that island with the Vikings." Aberly said to Reaper

"We can still hover over the village and create a no-fly zone using

the Patton's CIWS, but ground-wise, no we can't do much besides provide some air support." He replied

"Can't those ships elevate their guns high enough us to engage this thing?" The Infantry Commander asked

"No, the biggest threat to this vessel is being swarmed by their fighters." Reaper replied

"Like what they did to the ships you had protecting Berk?" Aberly asked him

"Yeah...but unlike those ships this thing has a shield generator that should protect us from most if not all of their weapons." He replied

"Yeah until it gives out and if they take out the CIWS weapons, we're a sitting duck in this thing." Aberly said, "I think a better choice will be for us to set this thing down in a sheltered area where we'll be safe from the big guns of that fleet but can still deploy with ease."

"But then that puts us at a risk of being overrun by their ground forces." Reaper replied

"Better than being up here if it's CIWS and shields get taken out." Aberly said, "Plus we can easily keep them out by sealing all the entrances!"

"The Jerry has a point..." The Infantry Commander said

"Fine..." Reaper replied, "I'll tell the captain to find a suitable spot to land the Patton, but he'll be just as optimistic about this plan as I am."

"When you are ever optimistic about anything?" Aberly asked him

"Good point." He replied

"Reaper!" Hiccup shouted as he and Dr. Ward approached

"What is now? Can you see I'm busy?" Reaper asked him

"Tell her to let me and Toothless fight!" Hiccup replied

Reaper sighed

"I'm sorry to disturb you! But there is just no way! His dragon has sustained a very serious injury to his leg and if you allow him to fly, it will probably never recover!" Ward said to him

"I know the risk, but this is my home island we're talking about!" Hiccup replied, "I have a right to fight for my home just you do to fight for Cape Girardeau!"

Reaper sighed

"Is there anything you can do to Toothless' leg to make it better?" He asked Ward

"No with the equipment or drugs I have here." She replied, "I'm not one the miracle workers of your legions."

"Did the 1st Legion leave any medical supplies aboard? Because surely they have something to treat dragon wounds in their cache." Reaper asked her

I never actually thought about asking them...but yes they did leave a few medical supply crates in the cargo hold because I saw them while I was trying to get bandages for his dragon." She replied, "But they require a fingerprint to unlock them."

"Well I'm sure mine should still work." Reaper replied, "Show me these crates you saw."

**Isle of Berk **

**Hairy Hooligan Village **

Henderson, Stoick, and Bravo Squad were helping the Engineers build another barricade when two Marines came running toward them

"THEY'RE COMING!" One of the Marines shouted as they climbed over the barricade while a Blackwater tank appeared over the hill behind them

"TAKE IT OUT!" Henderson shouted as a Marine with a AT4 took position behind the incomplete barricade and fired into the exposed under side of the tank as it topped the hill, knocking it out as Blackwater and Roman infantry followed with another tank

"Fall back!" Stoick shouted as the Roman and Blackwater soldiers started to fire at them

"You heard him! Fall back!" Henderson replied as they fell back toward the forests as the sounds of warfare once again began to echo from all around the village

"It never ends!" Benjamin shouted as Henderson's arm was grazed by a stray Roman bullet

"God dammit!" Henderson shouted as he held his arm but continued running

"Henderson! Are you okay?!" Jasmine asked him

"It's just a flesh wound! Keep running! We need to get to the caves before their damn dragons decide to join the party!" He replied

"Yeah I think we're a bit late on that one sir..." Hernandez replied as several dragons flew over them as a large two-legged dragon with four large wings landed on top of a nearby Viking house

"Uhhh...what the hell is that thing?!" Jasmine asked Stoick

"I have no idea! I've never seen that species before!" He replied before the Roman dragon spat a sustained and blazing torus of fire at them forcing them to spread to dodge it

"Screw this! Fire in the hole!" Henderson shouted as turned around and fired his rifle's under-slung grenade launcher at the dragon that leaped off the roof to avoid the incoming round giving Henderson, Stoick, and Bravo Squad time to retreat as Roman and Blackwater soldiers arrived and began to fire at the retreating Vikings and Americans

"Cease fire!" That group is mine!" Marius shouted as he took off back into the sky after them as in the caves, Alvin was tightly restrained as two of the armored American soldiers watched him

"Really sounds like you bit off more than you can chew with this battle." Alvin said to the Soldiers

"If think you're going to coax us into releasing you, think again." One of the Soldiers replied, "We are under strict orders to keep you under restraint until you can be relocated to secured location."

Alvin laughed

"You Americans follow orders like dogs follow their owner's commands!" He said to the Americans

"At least our superiors care about our lives, more than half your tribe is dead due to your leadership!" The American replied

"They wouldn't be if it wasn't for you and your weapons." Alvin replied

"You had plenty of chances to call it quits, but you didn't, so their blood is on your hands, even if we were the ones who did the shooting." The Other American said

"Outcasts don't back away from a fight." Alvin replied

"Say that to the ones who surrendered to us without a fight including your second-in-command." The American said to him

"Savage?!" Alvin asked, "Figures you would have captured him, he's a suck up!"

"You're really starting to get on my nerves tough guy." The American replied as an artillery shell exploded outside the cave

"Jesus that was close!" The Other American said

"Come on admit it, you and Stoick need all the help you can get to hold off the Romans and this Blackwater!" Alvin replied

"Why should we trust you?! Your name says that you can't be trusted!" The American said to him

"It's just a name...and we all know what they do to their prisoners." He replied

"How the hell do you know that?!" The American asked

"How couldn't I? All of your marines have been talking about it!"

Alvin replied, "And I'm just as fond as being turned into a dragon as the next guy!"

"You know what! Just shut up!" The American said to him

"These Americans are just as pig-headed as Stoick, no wonder they're allies!" Alvin thought to himself

"You know what I would like to speak with your leader!" Alvin said to them

The Americans looked at each other

"You might want to reconsider that..." One of them replied

"Why is that?" Alvin asked them

"We'll let you find out for yourself when he gets here." The Other One replied as in the forests, Henderson, Stoick, and Bravo Squad were stopping to catch their breath

"I think we lost him..." Dean said as he looked back in the direction they came and saw nothing

"I thought I've seen them all by now, but that dragon is something completely new to me!" Stoick said to him

"They might have created it by splicing DNA or crossbreeding." Jasmine replied

"What does that mean?!" Stoick asked her

"On simpler terms it means somebody in Gene Corp has been playing god!" Henderson replied, "Now we know why the APP doesn't like it people mess with shit like that! But there is also a chance that's it a undiscovered species from Europe or the Baltic."

"We need to get back to the others!" Jasmine said, "Does anybody know where we are?"

"Hell if I know!" Dean replied

"Oh great...we're lost in the middle of a battlefield with a dragon chasing after us." Herardez said as Henderson checked the wound on his arm

"Are sure you're okay?" Jasmine asked him

"It's just a flesh wound." He replied, "Stoick, this is your home, which way do we need to go to get the caves?"

"North." Stoick replied

"North it is then." Henderson said, "Lets get moving before that damn dragon finds us again!"

"Agreed." Stoick replied before they continued on while in the air over a mile away, Matius was continuing his pursuit

"Matius?! Where in Mars' name are you?!" Casca shouted to him over

the radio of his translation collar

"I'm in pursuit of several high value targets general including the Viking chieftain!" He replied

"I don't care if it's the emperor himself your chasing! You get back here NOW!" Casca shouted

"I'm sorry general, but I'm afraid your breaking up..." Matius replied before he shut off his radio as on the other end, Casca was cursing in dragonese

"General Atticus, I'm afraid that my second-in-command has gone AWOL!" Casca shouted to General Atticus over the radio

"I heard, continue with your current objective, deal with Matius as soon as he returns." Atticus replied

"Yes sir." Casca said

**Author's Notes: **

For those wondering, the Stormcutter is the species that Valka will be riding in HTTYD2, "Cloudjumper" is what Valka named it. At least according to the pages on it on the HTTYD wikia, which got it's info from the HTTYD2 Official Website. And yes this means that HTTYD2 characters will be appearing in the sequel, which will probably come after I see the movie.

19. Chapter 19

Chapter Nineteen: The Third Battle of Berk â€“ Part Two

**USAS Patton **

**An Hour Later **

Traveling at full speed with it's CIWS batteries firing, the USAS Patton smashed it's way through the swarms of attacking Roman and Blackwater aircraft as it flew toward Berk while inside it's hangar bay, the 502nd and dragon riders were preparing for deployment including Hiccup and Toothless, who were now clad in powered armor as Dr. Ward did one last check up on Toothless' leg to make sure that the APMSF medical chemicals she had applied to it had worked

"It's almost as if it was never broken!" Ward said to them

"So I guess that means we're good to go then?" Hiccup asked her

Ward nodded

"Just be more careful out there than you have been!" She asked him

"We will, I promise." Hiccup replied as Barnes approached them

"They're all your's general." Ward to said him before she left the Hangar bay

"Any word from my dad?" Hiccup asked Barnes

"No, but we did manage to contact what's left of our forces on the island, they're apparently holding up in the mountains and we're going to try setting down as close to their location as possible." He replied, "But according to them, the last time anybody saw your father was with Lieutenant Colonel Henderson and his squad." He replied

"Lieutenant Colonel?" Hiccup asked him, "I thought he was a Sergeant?"

Barnes made a shrug-like motion with his wings

"All we know is that after that, nobody has heard from them since, but apparently they're being hunted by some kind of new species of dragon, one that we've never encountered before." He said to him

"A new species?" He replied, "What do we know about it?"

"It's has two pairs of wings, two legs, and some people are saying it looks similar to an owl in the face." Barnes said to him, "Ring any bells?"

"Well in some of his writings, Bork the Bold did make a few scant references to a species of dragon that he called the Stormcutter which almost matches that description, but I couldn't find any drawings of it." He replied

"Better than nothing, but I'm making it our first objective to locate your father because without him your tribe might as well be a headless chicken unless you're willing to step into his shoes?" Barnes said

"Lets go rescue my dad!" Hiccup replied

"Very well then." Barnes said

**Isle of Berk **

While the sounds of warfare echoed across the island, Henderson, Stoick, and Bravo Squad were still making their way slowly and cautiously through the forest, evading Roman and Blackwater forces and maintaining radio silence to avoid being detected

"We've got to be close now!" Henderson said to them, "Does any of this like familiar to you Stock?"

"Not a bit, never been in this part of the forest before." Stoick replied

"You got to be kidding me..." Jasmine said

"Sir we should probably break radio silence, it maybe the only way we're going to get out of this." Turner said to Henderson

"You're right...but if we do, Blackwater is going to detect the signal and as far as we know that one dragon might still be trying to find us." He replied

"Better than wondering aimlessly around this damn forest and they're eventually going to find us one way or another." Dean replied

Henderson nodded and pulled out his radio

"This is Lieutenant Colonel Henderson, is anybody reading this channel?" Henderson asked over the radio

"Colonel Henderson, this is Brigadier General Fields, what is your position?!" A Marine Officer replied

"We don't know sir, but we're somewhere in the forest near the mountains and there's enemy patrols all around us and we've possibly got a Roman dragon chasing after us!" Henderson said to him

"Well I'm afraid we can't do much for you Colonel Henderson, all my units over here are tired down trying to keep them off the mountain." The Officer replied, "But luckily for you the USAS Patton has just entered our airspace with the 502nd and they're going to be looking for you, so I'm going to send them your coordinates, so just hold your position."

"Yes sir..." Henderson said reluctantly

"Hold position?! Is that man mad?!" Stoick asked him

"That doesn't mean hold this particularly position though." He replied as he looked around and saw a shallow river, "He'll take position there and use flares to mar-"

"INCOMING!" Jasmine screamed as the Stormcutter smashed it's way through the treetops before spitting another torus of fire that forced Stoick, Henderson, and Bravo to get behind whatever cover they could find

"Get Stoick to the riverbed, I'm going to take care of this damn thing!" Henderson shouted as he reloaded his rifle's grenade launcher

"Covering fire!" Dean screamed as he, Turner, and Benjamin fired at the Stormcutter with their weapons as Jasmine, Hernandez, and Stoick fell back to the riverbed and took cover in it as

"That %$%#ing armor is too strong!" Turner shouted as he, Dean, and Benjamin stopped firing to reload as the Roman shot out another torus of fire at the tree Henderson that was taking cover behind, burning through it's trunk causing it to fall

"Holy shit!" Henderson shouted as he dove out of the way, accidentally losing his grip on his rifle which fell on the ground while the Stormcutter began to walk toward firing another torus at Dean, Benjamin, and Turner forcing them behind more solid cover

"I've been looking forward to my first kill..." The Stormcutter said to Henderson with it's translation collar while the Marine pulled his KA-BAR combat knife from it's sheath on his chest and waited until the dragon was close enough before jumping up and stabbing it in the

neck in an exposed area between two armor plates

"This is for the Marines your people gassed on Berserker Island!" Henderson said to the Stormcutter as it's blood ran down the knife and onto his right arm, seeping into the still open wound while the dragon itself started to choke on it's own blood before Henderson pulled his knife out and placed it back it in it's sheath as the Stormcutter fell over onto it's side

"Holy crap, remind me not to piss you off!" Jasmine shouted to him

"It's not over yet." Henderson replied as the Stormcutter breathed his last behind him, "And something tells me we're going to be meeting the rest of his unit soon enough."

**IRS Nero **

Atticus and Moretti were standing on the deck of the Nero watching as the USAS Patton blazed it's way through their air forces when a Roman Officer came to them

"Sir, operation control is reporting that General Matius has flat-lined!" The Officer said to them

"Where was he last reported to be?" Moretti asked him

"Near the eastern end of the island, some place where we detected a groups of Marines contacting their commander." He replied

"His translation collar might have been damaged during the fight, send a patrol to investigate." Moretti said to him

"Yes general." He replied

**USAS Patton **

**The Isle of Berk **

502**nd**** Special Operations Fighter Squadron **

The F-45's were the first to fly out of the hangar bay followed by the post-human dragons

"Dice-2! You and the others make sure that the Patton reaches the LZ in one piece!" Barnes shouted to Ramirez over his translation collar's radio, "We'll regroup with you after we get Stoick and those Marines!"

"Affirmative!" Ramirez replied as he and the other F-45s broke off to escort the Patton as the dragon riders joined the post-human dragons as they flew toward the last known position of Bravo Squad and Stoick

"Lets just hope they're still in one piece when we get there!" Astrid shouted as back down on the ground, Henderson, Bravo Squad, and Stoick were watching as Blackwater patrol approached them

"Hold steady...I want to catch them off-guard." Henderson said quietly to Bravo Squad as the Patrol discovered the Stormcutter's

body

"Command! This is Foxtrot Squad...we've found General Matius and it isn't pretty!" The Blackwater Squad Leader shouted into his Comm System

"What is the general's status?!" His Superior replied

"He's dead as a door nail, looks like somebody stabbed him in the throat and let him bleed to dea-" The Squad Leader continued

"OPEN FIRE!" Henderson shouted as he, Stoick, and the rest of Bravo Squad opened fired on the patrol, quickly cutting most of it down including it's leader while the others quickly dove into cover and began to return fire as other nearby Blackwater and Roman patrols began to descend on the area upon hearing the firefight

"Enemy reinforcements!" Jasmine shouted as Henderson receded into the riverbed to reload with Turner, who noticed something on Henderson's arm

"HENDERSON! YOUR ARM!" Turner shouted as Henderson looked at his arm which had broken out into a dark brown scaly rash

"Holy shit!" Henderson shouted

"What's going on?!" Stoick asked them

"Nothing! Just keep firing!" Henderson replied as he pulled his sleeve down to cover the rash, "We'll worry about it later! Just hold position!"

Turner nodded as they returned to the firing line and continued firing until a armored Monstrous Nightmare descended from the sky and ignited it's armor and attacked the Roman and Blackwater soldiers as Barnes, Samantha, and Zoey landed in the riverbed behind Stoick and Bravo Squad

"Come on! Get on!" Barnes shouted to them with his translation collar

"You heard the man! Lets make it like a tree and get the hell out of here!" Henderson replied as he, Stoick, and Bravo Squad got onto the post-human Night Furies as the other post-human dragons distracted the attacking Blackwater and Roman soldiers with Henderson getting onto Barnes with Jasmine

"Good to see you again Henderson!" Astrid shouted after Barnes took off into the sky and joined the others

"Same here." Henderson replied uncomfortably

"Is something wrong?" Astrid asked him as she and Stormfly drove closer

"Yeah I killed that dragon that was after us and some of it's blood got onto my arm and...this is happening." Henderson replied as he pulled up his sleeve showing Astrid the rash, which had spread further up and down his arm

"Oh no..." Astrid said

"What?!" Barnes asked with his translation collar

"We've got a problem..." Astrid replied as they flew back to the USAS Patton which was beginning to land in a clearing in the mountains

"I'm turning into a dragon am I?" Henderson asked her

"What?!" Barnes shouted his translation collar as Astrid reluctantly nodded

Henderson took a deep breath

"Why me...why me..." Henderson thought to himself

"How is he still awake?!" Barnes asked

"Barnes I think now isn't a good time to be asking him questions..." Samantha replied to him telepathically

"I have a kid back home...what's going to happen her?!" Henderson asked them

"We'll figure something out once we get you back home, but for now just remain calm because as far as we know stress could cause the process to accelerate or even cause it to kill you." Barnes replied

"How can am I remain calm?!" Henderson asked him, "I'm slowly turning into a dragon I killed!"

Barnes sighed

"This is going to be a long night..." He thought to himself

"How did the nanites enter your blood stream?" Barnes asked him

"A cut on my arm where a Roman bullet grazed me." He replied

"That stuff isn't contagious is it?" Jasmine asked

"No, just as long as you don't get some of his blood inside you." Barnes replied as Henderson suddenly lost consciousness and slouched down

"Henderson!? Henderson?!" Jasmine asked Henderson as she shook him

"His adrenaline levels must have been high enough to keep the sedative that nanites use from taking affect!" Samantha replied

"He's probably better off being unconscious for it anyway." Barnes replied

"So what's going to happen to his kid?" Astrid asked him

"I don't know...doesn't she have a grandmother?" He replied

"Yeah she lives with them, her mother's dead." Jasmine said to him

"Then I guess she'll remain in her custody." He replied

**USAS Patton **

36**th**** Bundeswehr Armored Division **

Aberly's Leopard VIII tanks were the first to roll out from the Patton's cargo hold followed by Reaper's Megathon Mark II as the airship's CIWS batteries provided anti-air coverage against attacking Roman and Blackwater aircraft

"About time you guys got here!" An American Marine shouted over the radio to Aberly and Reaper, "Your tanks are needed at the entrance, our guys are being hammered up there by enemy armor!"

"Roger that!" Reaper replied

"Dad, we've got Stoick and the Marines he was with, one of the latter is turning into a dragon!" Barnes shouted to Reaper over his radio

"How the hell did he got infected with the nanites?" He asked him

"When he apparently killed that dragon that was chasing after them by stabbing in the throat with his kinife and some of it's blood seeped into a wound he had on his arm." He replied

"Just get back here to the Patton and get him to the medical bay!" Reaper said to him, "After that your first priority is to help us get control of this situation before it gets out of hand!"

"Will do." He replied

"What's going on?! I heard something about somebody turning into a dragon!" Aberly asked Reaper

"It's none of your concern general, lets just get to the frontlines!" He replied

"Jawhol!" Aberly said

**IRS Nero **

Moretti and Atticus were still on the deck of the Nero when an Officer delivered them the news about Matius' death

"Dammit, when can we recover the body?!" Moretti asked him

"In about a hour sir, all of our aircraft are currently dedicated to the attack." He replied

"What about the marines and Viking that killed him?" Atticus asked them

"They were extracted by their post-human dragons before we could

neutralize them." The Officer replied

Moretti sighed

"Great...send everything we have at their positions!" He shouted, "We need to secure this island before further Coalition reinforcements arrive!"

"We may want to consider moving to a land-based headquarters." Atticus said to him

"You can if you want too, I'm staying here." Moretti replied

"Suit yourself." Atticus said to him as back on Berk, Casca and his dragons were flying high over the battle taking out high value targets when the opportunity presented itself

"General Casca, command is reporting that General Matius is dead!" A Gronckle shouted to Casca

"No doubly a victim of his own ignorance..." Casca thought to himself

"We'll mourn our loss later! For now we focus on winning this battle!" He replied

"Yes sir!" The Gronckle said

20. Chapter 20

Chapter Twenty: The Third Battle of Berk â€“ Part Three

Isle of Berk

36**th**** Bundeswehr Armored Division **

Sometime Later

By the time Aberly's Leopards and Reaper's Megathon reached the frontline, Roman and Blackwater armor was pushing hard against the Marine and Viking positions, slowly forcing them back deeper into the mountains

"It's worst than I thought...all units engage at will!" Aberly shouted over the radio

"GUNNER! Target T-95 at 12:45, seventy meters!" Reaper shouted to his Gunner

"Target acquired!" The Gunner replied

"FIRE!" Reaper shouted as the Gunner pulled the trigger for the Megathon's twin-linked heavy rails guns that fired a solid plasma slug that annihilated the T-95 on impact

"Hit! Enemy T-95 is neutralized!" The Gunner replied as a plasma blast from Casca was absorbed by the Megathon's shield

"We've got a Night Fury!" Aberly shouted

"I've noticed that!" Reaper replied, "Barnes, we've got Casca and his henchmen up here! You guys better hurry up!"

"Roger that, we're on our way!" Barnes shouted as a round fired from a Roman Renault ricocheted off the upper glacial plate of Aberly's Leopard before the Renault was gutted by a SABOT round from another Leopard

"Aberly! Tell your men to preserve their SABOT rounds for Blackwater's tanks, HEAT and maybe even regular HE rounds should be enough to take care of the Roman tanks!" Reaper shouted to Aberly over the radio

"Fully noted!" Aberly replied as the Megathon's force field absorbed another of Casca's plasma blasts

"He never gives up..." Reaper thought to himself

**USAS Patton **

Barnes, Samantha, and Zoey were flying toward the Patton to drop off Bravo Squad and Stoick while the other post-human dragons and dragon riders headed to join the battle

"How is he?!" Barnes asked Jasmine, who was struggle to keep the unconscious Henderson upright so he wouldn't fall off

"I don't know, I've too busy trying to keep him from falling off!" She replied

Barnes sighed

"Doctor Ward, we need you in the hangar bay, we've got a code yellow!" He said to Doctor Ward over his radio

"Already on top of it!" She replied

"Affirmative! We should be touching down any second now!" Barnes replied as they passed through the Patton's shield

"I think he maybe getting warmer! Is this normal?!" Jasmine asked him

"Yeah!" Barnes replied as they flew into the hangar bay and landed as Doctor Ward and her assistants rushed forward with a stretcher, "Hurry up and get him on that stretcher! We need to get moving ASAP!"

"Are you this squad's corpsman?" Ward asked Jasmine as she helped her get Henderson down off of Barnes and onto the stretcher

Jasmine nodded

"Is he going to be okay?!" She asked Ward

"He will be now." She replied, "But if you mind, I would like for you to stay here and help us with the casualties because we're being overwhelmed."

Jasmine nodded as Stoick noticed an injured Thornado laying on his side in a corner as two APM Medics tended to him

"Thornado!" Stoick shouted as he ran to his dragon, "What happened to him?!"

"He was covering our unit's retreat when several of those Roman dragons attacked him, he fought them off, but they beat him up pretty bad, and broke his right wing in several places. We're doing what we can...but it's likely that he'll never be able to fly again." One of the APM Medics replied

Thornado whined in pain

"Is there anything you can do?!" Stoick asked one of the Medics

"If we had all of equipment, yes. But most of it was destroyed in the damn raid and the medical bay here is swamped." The Other Medic replied

Stoick sighed as Turner went toward Barnes as he, Zoey, and Samantha prepared to take off

"We would like to thank you for saving our asses back there general. Is there anything you want us to do?" Turner asked Barnes

"The best thing you can do right now is stay here with Henderson, because he will need all the help he can get once he wakes up." He replied

"What about his daughter?" Turner asked him

Barnes sighed

"As I said earlier, we'll have to find a way." He said to Turner, "If Henderson wakes up before all this is over, do whatever you have to keep him calm and relaxed because he'll be extremely fragile for the next few days, both physically and emotionally."

"We will." Turner said

Barnes nodded before he, Zoey, and Samantha took off and flew out of the hangar while Calvin, Sheva, and Emily watched from the cargo bay

"Shouldn't we do something?" Sheva asked her brother and Emily

"What can we do Sheva?" He asked her, "Emily is the only one here who has armor and knows how to fight, plus me and you will be easy targets for that General Casca the others keep talking about."

"Your brother's right Sheva, plus we can't just leave them here by themselves." Emily said to Sheva as she motioned back to the other post-human dragons were sound asleep behind them

Sheva snorted before walking back into the cargo bay

"She isn't happy about this." Emily said to Calvin telepathically

"I'm not either, I want to help too, but how can I?" He replied, "The best thing me and Sheva can do right now is stay where we are and hope that a fight doesn't come to us."

"If one does, we can always close and seal these blast doors." Emily said to him

"Yeah and be stuck inside with a bunch of ammunition and possibly mentally unstable dragons." He replied

"Better than getting mauled or even worst...eaten." Emily said

"Good point." Calvin replied

**The Frontline **

**A Few Seconds Later **

Barnes, Samantha, and Zoey joined the other post-human dragons and dragon riders as they arrived at the frontlines where the attacking Roman and Blackwater soldiers were slowly pushing forward against determined Viking and American resistance

"About time you guys got here!" Reaper shouted over the radio

"Where's Casca?!" Barnes asked him

"He should be somewhere up there with you guys, so keep an eye out, he might be hiding because he might have expended all of his shots trying to knock out our shields!" He replied

"Copy that, anybody have a visual?!" Barnes shouted over the radio

"Negative, I can only see his lackeys and the slaves." Vasili replied

"We might lure him out if we attack his men." Samantha said to Barnes telepathically

"Good idea..." Barnes replied, "Engage those dragons, if he isn't going to come us, we'll make him come."

Meanwhile Casca was flying at a higher altitude after spending all of his shots trying to knock out the shields of the American heavy tank below while his men and slaves continued their assault

"That barrier is too strong for me to take out, so I'm going to have find a way around it without getting too close to the damn thing." Casca thought to himself as his radio crackled

"General! The American dragons and Viking dragon riders are engaging us!" One of Casca's Men shouted to him over the radio

"Gods dammit!" Casca thought as he looked below to see his men and slaves being attacked by the enemy and almost immediately picked out General Barnes as he pursued a Deadly Nadder before plasma blasting it out of the sky

"Time for round 2..." Casca said to himself as he began to dive down toward the battle while down below, Barnes was looking for a target when Samantha contacted him over his radio

"Barnes! Watch out! Casca is coming down on you from directly above!" Samantha shouted to him before Barnes performed a combat roll to avoid General Casca's dive attack before pursuing after him with Toothless and Hiccup joining suit

"So I guess that's Casca?" Hiccup asked Barnes

"Yep." He replied telepathically

"Well lets hurry up and get him before he gets away." Hiccup said as Toothless snorted in agreement

"I can't say I'm really fond of the idea of killing one of my own species, even if he is a crossbreed, but it looks I don't have much of a choice here." Toothless said to Barnes telepathically

"Just be careful and keep your eyes open, he might be leading us into a trap, because he did it to me on Berserker Island." He replied, "Dice-2! Do you have a visual on us and Casca?"

"Affirmative, we are positioning ourselves to intercept." Ramirez replied, "Keep on him!"

"Copy!" Barnes said to him

Barnes, Toothless, and Hiccup continued to pursue Casca over the forest while the other dragon riders and post-human dragons continued their fight with Casca's men and the slave dragons, killing the former with extreme prejudice and freeing as many of the latter as they could while also taking out targets of opportunity

"These two never give up!" Casca thought to himself as he tried to out-fly his pursuers before he saw the American aircraft hovering in front of him and immediately dove to a lower altitude to avoid the incoming fire

"Target is performing evasive maneuvers!" Ramirez shouted to Barnes over the radio

"I can see that! He might be trying to double back to the fleet, we cannot let him escape!" He replied

"But sir, what about the others?!" Carmen asked him

"Dammit, your right! Lets head back and help the others." He replied before he, Toothless, and Hiccup started to head back to the battle at full-speed as the remaining Roman and enslaved dragons retreated

"Did you get him?!" Astrid asked Barnes and Hiccup over the radio

"Negative, he got away from us again and we're needed here more, so for now Casca lives." Barnes replied

**Cape Girardeau, MO **

**APM Command Bunker **

Paxton was with a holographic General Conrad as they viewed the situation on Berk via a holographic map as they debated their options

"Is there anyway you can get your forces to Berk more quickly?!" Paxton asked Conrad

"I'm afraid not, but the 5th and 1st Legions should be arriving with the USAS Farmington and St. Louis in about half an hour." He replied

"That may not have a half of an hour!" Paxton shouted to him, "Is there anything we can do?!"

"Well sir if you insist, we do have a boomer, the USS _Annihilation_, holding position near Bashem that has a full payload of Spearhead XII SLBMs that have been fitted with plasma warheads powerful enough to flatten a city block and should be more than enough to put a major dent in that fleet." Conrad said to Paxton

"What about collateral?" He asked him

"The warheads might level part of the village and parts of the forests, but the risk of friendly fire is minimal as most of our forces are situated in the mountains away from the blast radius." Conrad replied

"Looks like we don't any other choice...launch the missiles." Paxton said to him

Somewhere near the Isle of Bashem

USS **_Annihilation**_**(SSBN-892)**_**
â€“**__**Devastator**_**-class Ballistic Missile Submarine**

The Captain of the USS _Annihilation_, Tammy Chambers took her launch key off from around her neck as her Executive Petty Officer(XPO) took his off

"Are you ready?" She asked as she put them into one lock as the XPO did the same with his

"Ready when you are skipper!" He replied

Tammy nodded and they both simultaneously turned their keys, opening the launch bay doors and arming the plasma warheads of the twelve Spearhead XII SLBMs inside each silo as a red button on the launch console lit up

"May god help those mother &$%$ers!" Tammy shouted when she slammed her first on the button and launched all twelves of the Spearheads

"What a waste of good missiles..." The XPO said

"They're aren't being wasted as long as they blow something up." Tammy replied

IRS **_Nero**_

Sometime Later

Unaware of the approaching American SLBMs, Moretti was inside the main bridge of the _Nero _using his binoculars to observe the battleas it's main battery fired a salvo of shells at the American and Viking positions on the island

"They can't hold that line for much longer..." Moretti thought to himself when suddenly several flaming projectiles fell from the heavens onto the fleet, turning the _Nero _and most of the other Roman warships into ash in several brilliant flashes of green light while on land, Reaper was temporarily blinded by the flashes from the plasma blasts as Aberly cursed and screamed in German over the radio while the flashes faded as several mushroom-shaped plasma clouds rose over horizon from where the Roman fleet had been

"What the hell was that?!" Barnes shouted over the radio as the rest of the 502nd cursed and shouted

"We either just got nuked or somebody detonated a very large bomb!" Reaper replied as he rubbed his eyes as he tried to restore his eyesight

"Last time I checked nukes didn't create plasma clouds like that!" Samantha shouted

"Then it must has been plasma warheads! A sub in our fleet had entire payload of them!" Reaper replied

"Well those plasma warheads did the trick! Almost the entire Roman fleet is gone...along with most of the village as well." Hiccup shouted

"Lets take this chance and fall back to the Patton! We're almost out of ammunition here!" Aberly replied

"I have to agree, we're running on fumes up here! It's a miracle that most of us still have the strength to even fly right now!" Barnes said

"Okay all of you fall back to the Patton, we'll provide covering fire!" Reaper replied as some of the Roman and Blackwater forces began to recover from the effects of the blast, "Make it quick too!"

"Gunner! Identify and engage targets at will!" Reaper shouted to his Gunner, "Driver put us into a slow reverse until the others are safe then get us the hell out of here!"

**USAS Patton **

**Medical Bay **

Ward and Bravo Squad were checking on Henderson who had been placed into a stasis tank as he rapidly turned into a Stormcutter

"Although the transformation is happening much quicker than I

expected, he should still be okay." Ward said to Bravo Squad as she read the data being displayed on the control console for the stasis tank, "It would be better if we knew more about his species though."

"We're more concerned about not letting your bosses at Area 51 cut him up to study him." Turner replied

"I ensure you that they're not going to cut him up, my superiors are not the sadistic assholes that some people make them out to be." Ward said to him, "If you want sadistic assholes you should see some of people working at weapons research and development because you don't want to know how many of them have been caught trying to test their latest inventions on some poor interim or security guard, but luckily Area 51's security keeps them under tight watch."

"I'd hope so." Jasmine said as on the other side of the ship, Alvin was being escorted into the brig by two APM Shocktroopers where they met the Warden and two security guards armed with stun batons

"He's all your's." One of the Shocktroopers said to the Warden as he shoved the barrel of his rifle into Alvin's back and pushed him toward the two security guards, who took hold of him while the Warden nodded

"Also we would like to remind you that command wants him in one piece for when we hand him back to the Hooligans, so don't beat him too badly." The Shocktrooper added

"I know, I know. It was in the memo I got." The Warden said to him before looking at the Security Guards, "Put him in with his lackey, so he has somebody to talk too."

"Yes sir." One of the Security Guards replied as they each grabbed one of Alvin's arms and began walking him through the brig toward the cell where Savage was being kept in

"No! Don't put him in here with me!" Savage shouted to the Guards

"Sorry mate, but the Warden said we had too." One of the Guards replied as the other used his keycard to unlock the cell door before the other shoved Alvin in before they closed and locked it

"Hi Savage...I were told you were captured." Alvin said as Savage slowly backed away

"I didn't have any other choice Alvin! They got me while I was knocked out!" He replied

"What about the old man?" Alvin asked him

"Mildew? He's dead." He replied, "So I'm guessing you have a plan to escape...right?"

"Who said anything about escaping?" Alvin asked him

21. Chapter 21

Chapter Twenty-One: Sealing Up

**USAS Patton **

Hangar Bay

Several Minutes Later

Vasili and the other post-human Gronckles were the last members of the 502nd to enter the hangar bay before it's shielded blast doors were shut and sealed

"Is everybody here?!" Barnes shouted to everybody over the radio of his translation collar

"I think so Barnes!" Vasili replied as Ramirez, Carmen, Newell, Louis, and the New Guy dismounted from their F-45s after taxiing them to their designated areas as Barnes sighed in relief

"Now what?!" Jones asked him

"We sit here and wait and hope that reinforcements get here before Rome and Blackwater figure out how to get in here." He replied

"We're going to go check on Henderson." Hiccup said to Barnes, who nodded

Hiccup and the other dragon riders left while outside the Patton, Reaper's Megathon slowly backed up onto the loading ramp into the Patton's vehicle bay while the airship's shield generator protected them from the fire of the attacking Blackwater and Roman forces as Reaper unbuttoned his hatch

"Lift up this damn ramp before they get here!" Reaper shouted to the APM Shocktrooper standing at the control panel at the ramp after his Megathon was safely inside as he pushed up the switch that made the ramp lift up

"Did everybody make it inside?!" Reaper asked him as he looked at the wounded and tired Marines and Vikings inside the vehicle bay before him

"Yes sir." He replied, "And all other entrances have been sealed, there is no way anything or anybody can get in or out of here."

"Good, get all these people the aid they need." Reaper said to him

"We'll do our best, but we're running low on medical supplies due to the overwhelming number of casualties." He replied

"Just do what you can then." Reaper replied while elsewhere in the Patton, Hiccup and the other dragon riders were entering the Medical Bay as Ward and Jasmine hooked up a wounded Viking to a IV

"That's all we can do for you for now since both of the operating rooms are taken." Ward said to the Viking as Jasmine noticed Hiccup and the dragon riders trying to making their way to them

"I guess you guys are here to see Henderson?" Jasmine asked them and Hiccup nodded, "Well he's in the big room in the back in one of those acceleration tanks or whatever they call em' and he's not looking so great right."

"Just on the outside or...?" Astrid asked her

"He's fine, but the transformation has been going a lot faster than I expected it would, Gene Corp must have upgraded their nanites again." She replied, "I would not be surprised at all if he wakes up with the next 24 hours at the current rate."

"That fast?" Snotlout asked her and Ward nodded

"They've gotten pretty damn good at it that's for sure." She said, "After he wakes up I'll get a blood sample and send it to Area 51 for analysis once we get everything sorted out."

"Where are the others?" Hiccup asked Jasmine

"They're in there with him, I would be in there with them, but they me needed out here." She replied, "If you guys want to go check on him, go right ahead."

"Thanks." Hiccup said before he and the Other Riders moved on

"Come on Corporal, we have a lot of work to do." Ward said to Jasmine as they quickly moved to their next patient

**Isle of Berk **

Roman and Blackwater Base Camp

With their fleet utterly destroyed along with most of their supplies, the Roman and Blackwater forces were struggling to regroup as General Atticus tried to take hold of the situation

"What is the status of the Coalition forces?" Atticus asked the Blackwater Officer who had been leading the attack on the Coalition positions

"They have fallen back to the American airship and sealed themselves inside." He replied

"Have you made any attempts to breach it?" Atticus asked him

"We have, but it's CIWS batteries have been shooting down everything we've been launching at it and anything that gets past them doesn't make it through the shields and on top of that I doubt that anything we have is going to punch a hole in it's armor anyway." He replied, "If we had the time too, I would say just wait until they run out of supplies, but we don't have the time because their other forces are no doubly closing in on us."

"That thing has to have some kind of weak spot! Are you sure you've tried everything?!" Atticus asked him

"Well if it was in the sky, we could just take out it's engines after we wore down it's shields and destroyed the CIWS batteries, but it

isn't flying." He replied, "The only thing that might be able to affect it is an EMP weapon which would only succeed in knocking out it's shields and CIWS batteries, leaving us with the problem of having to breach it's hull and we don't have any EMP weapons."

"What about Casca and his men?!" Atticus asked

"They aren't going to be close enough to that thing without being torn to shreds by the CIWS batteries." The Blackwater Officer replied, "Sir, we should not waste any time with that damn thing, we've got bigger problems like preparing for the Coalition's counter-attack!"

Atticus took a deep breath

"You're right..." He said to the Officer, "We'll pull our forces back from the airship and leave a few behind to keep an eye on it."

"That might be one of the first places they'll try to land though as from my experiences, the Americans and other Coalition forces we've seen will go out of their way to save their own." A Roman Officer replied

"More the reason to stay away from that thing because we've have some intel indicating that the next wave of reinforcements is going to be coming in two of their bigger airships and do you really want to have our forces in those things' path because they can easily wipe us all out." The Blackwater Officer asked him, "The best place to be would be the village, because it's unlikely that they'll fire on it to avoid collateral damage."

"Avoid collateral damage?! Did you see what happened to the part of the village that got caught in the blast radius of those gods damned missiles?!" The Roman Officer shouted at him, "It was by all means incinerated!"

"You're forgetting to consider that was most likely a calculated risk they took to destroy our fleet." The Blackwater Officer replied

"He's right, those missiles were too large to use without using risking some collateral damage." Atticus said to the Roman Officer, "But we also can't deny the possibility that the Americans will bombard the village with their airships once they arrive as the Vikings here are used to having to rebuild their village and will more than likely permit them to do so."

"So what are we going to do then?!" The Roman Officer asked him

"I don't know." He replied

**USAS Patton **

**Hangar Bay **

Barnes, his family, the other post-human dragons, and the dragon riders' mounts were taking advantage of the downtime to rest as the dragon riders returned from the medical bay

"Sounds like they gave up on trying to get inside." Astrid said

noticing she could not longer hear the faint sounds of explosions and artillery shells coming from outside the airships

"Good, we finally have some time to rest..." Ruffnut replied as Hiccup went to his father, who was sitting by Thornado, who was sound asleep

"How is he?" Hiccup asked him

"He's fine for now." Stoick replied, "How are you?"

"I've been better." Hiccup said

"Any idea on how long we're going to be stuck in here?" Stoick asked him

"Not a clue, but I'm sure not for very long." He replied while in the brig, one of the security guards were on patrol when he passed Alvin's cell and saw Alvin strangling Savage

"Hey!" The Security Guard shouted as he took out his key-card and used to unlock the cell door before storming in with his stun baton drawn and striking Alvin with it as hard as he could, putting enough electricity into his body to make him drop Savage, who fell to the floor as he tried to catch his breath as the Security Guard continued to repeatedly beat Alvin with his baton while another Security Guard, who had heard the commotion, rushed in to help and drew out a pair of handcuffs

"Hold him still!" The Other Security Guard shouted as he struggled to put the handcuffs on Alvin's wrists while Savage took the chance to grab the first Security Guard's handgun and tried to fire it at the Security Guard, only for it beep

"What the?!" Savage asked as both of the Security Guards, hearing the beep turned around and attacked Savage and tried to wrestle the handgun away from him as Alvin took the chance to grab one of the Guards' key-cards and hid it in his beards as the Warden and two more Security Guards rushed into the cells and joined the other two security guards as they wrestled the handgun away from Savage and beat him several times with their stun batons

"I should've known this was a bad idea, get him out of here and put him in another cell!" The Warden shouted to the Guards, who lifted Savage up and carried him out of the cell

"And YOU!" The Warden said to Alvin as he pointed his stun baton at him, "Try something like this then and I ensure you that you will regret it!" He said to him before he left the cell and closed the door before walking back to his office, further up the aisle while Alvin took the key-card out from his beard and looked at it

"That was too easy." He thought to himself before he placed the key-card back into his beard, "Saving this for later."

**Isle of Berk **

APMSF 1**st**** Legion **

**Sometime Later **

Using their star-field camouflage, the USAS St. Louis and Farmington were able to remain undetected as they approached Berk before they finally announced their arrival to the unsuspecting Blackwater and Roman forces on Berk with a full plasma barrage on several of their positions from it's cannon as the APMSF 1st and 5th Legions descended to the island with their VTOLs while Karlson and Tesla followed closely behind by their gunship escorts

"We're going to go secure the USAS Patton! You take your men and attack the village, we should join you there shortly!" Karlson shouted to General Horowitz with translation collar's radio

"Roger that!" Horowitz replied as the 5th Legion's VTOLs and aircraft broke off from the formation and headed toward the village

"I hope Calvin and Sheva are okay." Tesla said to Karlson telepathically

"I'm sure they're alright, I doubt Barnes would make them do anything extremely dangerous." He replied

"Sir, we have established contact with the USAS Patton!" A APMSF Pilot shouted to him

"Patch them through!" Karlson replied

"About time you guys got here!" Reaper shouted to him over the radio

"What's the situation down there?!" He asked him

"Fine...except for the fact that we're filled to capacity, running out of supplies, surrounded by hostiles, and have a marine turning into a dragon in the medical bay." Reaper replied

"What?!" Karlson asked him

"We'll talk about it later, but for now get these guys away from the Patton so we can get out of here!" He replied

"Can Barnes and his guys fight?" Karlson asked him

"Most of them can barely lift their wings up right now, so I doubt it." He replied

Karlson snorted

"What about our kids?!" Tesla asked Reaper

"Calvin and Sheva? They're alright, Barnes has them and Emily babysitting the dragons they freed from the Roman praetorian dragons." He replied

"I told you they were going to be okay!" Karlson said to Tesla telepathically

"Well hold on for a bit longer, we're coming!" Karlson shouted to Reaper

"We'll be waiting." He replied

"Lets just get this over with so we can be with our kids!" Tesla said to Karlson

"Agreed." He replied while back in the Patton's Hangar Bay, Barnes and Samantha were curled up in a corner with their children as they tried to fall asleep

"I can't remember the last time I've been this tired..." Samantha said to Barnes telepathically

"I can't either, it doesn't help that it hurts to do anything other than breathing." He replied, "But I guess it's all part of the job."

Barnes and Samantha lifted their heads along with everybody else's in the hangar as the sounds of gunfire and explosions erupted outside the hangar along with the roars of Monstrous Nightmares and the sounds of jet aircraft and VTOLs flying over

"Finally! Reinforcements are here!" Vasili shouted as Calvin, Sheva, and Emily came into the hangar with a few of the freed slave dragons

"Karlson?! Is that you and Tesla we're hearing out there?!" Barnes shouted over the radio of his translation collar

"Who else could it be?!" Karlson replied, "But you guys stay where you are until you get the all-clear signal from me or Tesla!"

"Understood, it's not like we'd be of any of use anyway, it hurts for me just to talk right now!" Barnes said to him, "But be careful out there because Casca and his men are somewhere on the island!"

"You think we don't know that?!" Karlson replied

"Just being sure." Barnes said to him

"So who's the marine that's getting turned into a dragon?" Karlson asked him

"Sergeant Jayden Henderson." Barnes replied

"Shit..." Karlson said quietly

"You know him too?" Barnes asked him

"We kind of worked together in the past...it's a long story." Karlson replied, "But I do know he has a kid."

"That's what his squad mates and the dragon riders have been telling me." Barnes said

"What species?" Karlson asked him

"It's some kind of new one, Stormcutter is what I think they're calling it." Barnes replied

"How the hell did this happen?" Karlson said

"He stabbed a Roman Stormcutter in the throat and some of it's blood got into a wound he had on his arm." Barnes replied

Karlson sighed

"We'll worry about him later! But for now we need to focus on getting you guys out there and throwing the Romans and Blackwater off Berk!"

22. Chapter 22

Chapter Twenty-Two: Surrender

**The Isle of Berk **

APMSF 1**st**** Legion**

**Several Seconds Later **

When they spotted the USAS Patton, Karlson and Tesla roared and ignited their fire-jackets, signaling to the rest of the 1st Legion to begin their attack on the Roman and Blackwater positions overlooking the airship

"Let's finish this so we can go home!" Tesla shouted as both she and Karlson began their descent and landed in the center of the Roman positions as four Mallards stopped overhead and hovered as Stormtroopers began to fast rope down

"Lets show these Romies how real soldiers fight! FOR THE UNION!" A Stormtrooper shouted

"Haven't heard that one in a while." Karlson thought to himself as he and Tesla rampaged through the encampment, setting tents of fire and forcing the Roman soldiers inside them to come out as Stormtroopers move through and neutralized them as a heavy-lift Mallard deployed a Pershing II while other Mallards landed and unloaded more Stormtroopers

"These must be secondary troops, they're hardly putting up a fight!" An APMSF Stormtrooper shouted over the radio

"Who cares?! Clear em' out!" Karlson replied as the Patton's vehicle bay doors began to open as the unloading ramp folded out with Reaper's Megathon being the first vehicle to roll out followed by Aberly's Leopard

"What did we miss?!" Reaper shouted over the radio

"Not much, these guys aren't putting up a fight at all! But General Horowitz and his men are going to attack the village, so you can go help them, we'll join you after we finish up here." Karlson replied, "Actually scratch that! Reaper, you take control of the 1st Legion after we're finished here, me and Tesla are wanting to see our kids!"

"Sure! But before you do that, tell the Farmington and St. Louis that

they need to prepare themselves for incoming casualties because we need to get some of the wounded off the Patton so they can receive treatment!" Reaper said to him

"They're already on top of it!" He replied, "They've VTOLs on standby and everything, so send them all you have! What's the status of Sergeant Henderson?"

"You mean that Marine?! He's doing okay from what I've heard, they're saying that he might actually wake up within the next 24 hours!" Reaper said to him, "Also is that Marine any what related to that damn Conservation commentator your chased out of the country a few years back?"

"He's his nephew and he's actually a pretty damn good soldier, which is something I wanted to talk about with you later." He replied

"Sure..." Reaper said

"Mr. Karlson! I think we've got this place cleared out!" A APMSF Stormtrooper shouted to Karlson over the radio

"Copy that!" He replied

"Go see your kids Karl, you and Tesla deserve it." Reaper said to him as the Patton's hangar bay doors began to open

"Be sure to leave a few guys behind just in the case the Romans and Blackwater get any bright ideas." Karlson replied as he and Tesla lifted off and headed into the hangar while Reaper continued to move forward in his Megathon with Aberly and his Leopards as they were slowly joined by the 1st Legion's tanks

"Time to end this damn campaign." Aberly said to Reaper

**USAS Patton Hangar Bay **

Karlson and Tesla landed in the hangar bay where they were greeted by the exhausted 502nd and post-human dragons

"Oh my god! Your dad wasn't kidding, you guys are wasted!" Tesla said to Barnes, who was the only one to greet them, although he was at the point he could barely stand up straight

"This is what happens when you fly almost three days straight with little to no sleep." He replied tiredly as Calvin and Sheva came out of the cargo bay with Emily after hearing their parents' voices

"Mom! Dad!" Calvin and Sheva both shouted as they ran to their parents while Barnes slowly made his back to Samantha

"Have you two been good?" Karlson asked them

Calvin and Sheva nodded while Emily stopped behind Calvin as he played with his father

"Why aren't you tired?" Karlson asked Emily telepathically

"Because somebody needs to watch your son." She replied

"Are you sure it wasn't him watching you?" Karlson asked aloud

"DAD!" Calvin shouted at his dad

"What?! Everybody knows you two have the hots for each other!" He replied

"They slept together while you guys were gone." Sheva said to Karlson telepathically

"Why am I not surprised by that?" He thought to himself

"Aw who cares anyway, you two are getting old enough to have a serious relationship anyway." Karlson replied as Calvin and Emily exchanged looks with Emily making a shrug-like motion with her wings as some the slave dragons stepped out of the cargo bay

"Have they been in there with you the entire time?" Tesla asked Sheva

"Yeah, but we haven't had any problems with them." She replied as Karlson, followed by Calvin and Emily, approached them

"So do any of you speak English?" Karlson asked them and received no response before Calvin spoke to them in German and then some of them nodded

"Oh I see." Karlson thought to himself

"My German may not be the best, but it's good enough to suffice at least." Calvin said to his dad

"Well I wished I had more time to teach you how to speak more of it." He replied, "What did you tell them?"

"I told them you were my dad." Calvin said to him as one the dragons spoke to Karlson, who smiled

"What is it?" Calvin asked him

"He thinks you and Emily are married." He replied

APMSF 1**st**** Legion**

**Near the Village **

Reaper was standing up with his hatch unbuttoned as his Megathon pushed through the forest, knocking down trees and clearing a path for the other American and European tanks following behind him toward the village

"Sir maybe you should button up the hatch just in case we're attack by those Roman dragons?!" Reaper's Gunner shouted to him

"Good point son." He replied as he sat down in his seat and closed up the hatch and picked up his radio, "Aberly?! How are you doing back there?!"

"I've been better!" Aberly shouted, "But this would be much harder if that big-ass tank of yours wasn't clearing this path for us!"

"She isn't called a breakthrough tank for nothing." Reaper replied, "Well anyway should be getting to arrive at the place where we're supposed to link up with the 5th Armored Regiment and they should have some ammo trucks for your tanks.

"I hope so, because we've only got one SABOT and six HEAT rounds left in our ammunition rack!" Aberly replied while Reaper used the thermal imaging on his periscope to search the surrounding area for threats, but saw none through the trees

"I'm not seeing anything on my thermal. Do you got anything on your periscope?" Reaper asked Aberly

"Negative." He replied, "Doesn't mean we shouldn't keep our eyes open though."

"This is why I hate moving through forests, too many *%$#ing things can go wrong." Reaper's Tank Driver said over the Megathon's internal comm system

"Ain't that the truth." Reaper thought to himself as the armor column started to move through a large clearing next to a small cove

"Careful! We've got a cove over here!" Reaper shouted

"Roger that, thanks for the heads up!" Aberly replied, "How much farther until we link with that armored regiment?"

"Should be dead ahead." Reaper said, "I'm going to see if I can raise them."

Reaper turned the channel on his radio

"This is Paxton Actual to APMSF 5th Armored Regiment, does anybody read over?" Reaper said

"Paxton Actual this is Brigadier General Charleston and we're reading you loud and clear, what is your current location?" An APMSF Officer replied

"General Charleston we're about a click or so from our planned rendezvous point, but we don't have a visual on you!" Reaper said to him

"Well we're here, but I'm going to go ahead and launch a flare, say something if you see it." He replied

"Roger that." Reaper said and a few seconds later a red signal flare was fired up into the air ahead of them and exploded in the sky, "We see it, we're heading there now."

"Copy that, we've got those ammo trucks you wanted for those kraut tanks here as well." The APMSF Officer said to him

"Ten-four, Paxton Actual out." He replied as he switched the channel

back just as Aberly was screaming something to him

"ROMAN ANTI-TANK INFANTRY IN THE COVE!" He screamed as the shield of Reaper's Megathon absorbed a RPG fired up from one of the Roman soldiers that had been hiding in the cove

"Sir, we can't depress our guns low enough to engage them!" The Gunner shouted to Reaper

"Well gun depression has never really been a strong point of these things!" He replied, "Aberly hold on for a bit!"

Reaper switch the channel back

"General Charleston, we've got Roman anti-armor personnel hitting us from this cove over here and we can't get them with our guns! Do you have any mortars with you?" Reaper shouted to the APMSF Officer

"Affirmative, just give us a grid reference and we'll hammer those *%$#$%$s all the way to hell!" He replied as Reaper pulled out a tactical map of Europe and searched for the cove

"Fire for effect at grid reference H393!" Reaper shouted

"Grid reference received! Acquiring fire solution!" An APMSF Artillery Officer shouted as he typed out grind reference on a targeting computer which then sent it to the teams manning the mortars, "Firing solution acquired! Firing for effect!"

Seconds passed before high-explosive mortar rounds began to rain down upon the Roman soldiers in the cove

"Rounds complete!" The Artillery Officer shouted as Reaper extended out his periscope to get a better look down into the cove and scanned it for any remaining Roman soldiers

"Good effect! All targets have been neutralized!" Reaper replied

"I've forgotten how scary accurate your artillery is." Aberly said to Reaper

"Lets get to the 5th Armored and get your tanks restocked before there isn't anybody left to fight in the village." He replied as the armor column moved on while in the Great Hall of the Village, General Atticus was staring blankly at his map of Berk as one of his Officers marked off one Roman or Blackwater unit after another as they were wiped out by the seemingly unstoppable advance of the APMSF 1st and 5th Legions or by their destructible airships which were hovering over the village bombarding their positions with their plasma cannon while aircraft picked off any targets they could find without hesitation

"The frontline is collapsing and the Americans are closing, we need to get out here!" A Roman Officer shouted as tried to flee, but was blocked by another Officer

"You will hold your position solider!" Another Roman Officer shouted

"Do you see what's going out there sir?! It's a massacre, we don't stand a chance against that!" The Other Officer replied

"We have our orders, we are to hold this village as long as possible, no matter the cost!" The Officer shouted to him, "Now get back to your post before I drag you back to it myself!"

"What do we have to gain here now?! The fleet is gone, our so called allies are surrendering in mass to the Americans, and to make matters worst we can't even slightly dent their forces!" He replied before the Other Officer grabbed him by the neck

"Let him go!" Atticus shouted to him, "He's right there is no point to continuing this fight anymore, our forces are shattered and the Americans and their allies have all the advantages."

"But sir, the emperor demands that we-" He replied

"The emperor hasn't demanded or ordered a damn thing! This entire war has been orchestrated by Gene Corp and they've been using us as well as Blackwater as pawns for their schemes and agendas!" Atticus shouted, "And we've been eating right up until now and I'm sick of it! I've lost too many men today."

"What are your orders general?" The Officer asked him

"Order our remaining units to cease fire and surrender to the nearest American unit." He replied

"What about General Casca and his men?" The Officer asked

"Where are they?" Atticus asked him

"We...don't know, nobody's seen them since before the fleet was destroyed. We think they might have been caught in the blast and were disintegrated." He replied

"Dammit, Casca was one of my best officers, but the Americans would've killed them anyway even if they did surrendered." Atticus said, "Send a messenger to the American commander to tell that we're standing down."

"Yes sir." The Officer replied; About a few minutes later, Reaper was sitting on the turret of his Megathon looking at his map while Aberly's tanks were resupplied with ammunition when an APMSF Officer came to him

"What is it?" Reaper asked him

"Sir, the Roman forces in the village are surrendering along with a majority of the Blackwater forces!" He replied

"Any conditions?" Reaper asked him

"None, besides that we provide medical aid to his forces." He replied

"Well that's a given." Reaper said to him, "Tell General Conrad, he'll be happy to hear this."

"But sir, General Casca and his dragons are still unaccounted for, but they're believed to have been killed in the plasma strikes." The Officer said to him

"We're still not going to take any chances, have some of our gunships sweep the entire island." He replied

"Yes sir." The Officer said, "Then what should we do about all the Outcasts in the Patton's brig?"

"That's something you need to ask Stoick, because that's his decision to make." Reaper replied, "But if he gives that down to us, we'll ship them off to some of our special holding facilities in Alaska."

"Yes sir." The Officer said

**USAS Patton **

**Hangar Bay **

Calvin was laying down with his sister between their parents, almost sleep when he felt something nudge him

"Calvin wake up." Emily said to him telepathically make him open his eyes and raise his head and yawn

"What is it Emily?" He replied telepathically and tiredly

"The Romans have just surrendered." She said to him

"Thank god, we can finally go home now!" He replied, waking everybody else in the hangar

"What's going on?!" Vasili shouted

"The Romans have just surrendered!" Emily replied before everybody in the hangar began to cheer

"You wanted to discuss something else do you?" Calvin asked her telepathically

"Yeah...been thinking about what your father said about us getting old enough to have a...serious relationship." She replied

"You know he was kidding right?" Calvin asked her

"I know...but it still stirred a few thoughts." She replied, "What I'm saying Calvin is that maybe it is time we do try going for something more."

"Emily are you suggest we get married?" Calvin asked her

"What?! No...we at least not yet! But we can work up to that if we want..." She replied as he stood up

"I don't care what we do, as long as it's with you." Calvin said to her while the medical bay, Dr. Ward was with Jasmine and the rest of Bravo Squad as she checked on Henderson, who was now completely

transformed into a dragon

"He's much bigger than I anticipated." Ward said

"How big is he?" Turner asked her

"His length is at least 31ft, so he's bigger than a Monstrous Nightmare." She replied, "Meaning he's the largest dragon I've ever examined, at least length wise, I think he's still a bit shorted than a Nightmare though."

"Uhhhh...are his eyes supposed to be twitching like that?!" Benjamin asked when he noticed that Henderson's eyes were starting to twitch and Ward immediately ran over to see it for herself

"Oh shit, he's about to wake up! Hurry, go over there to that console and lift up the top of the tank!" She shouted

"I thought you said he wasn't going to take up for another 24 hours?!" Jasmine shouted as Dean ran over to the control console and started lifting up the top of the tank

"I said he could wake up IN the next 24 hours not FOR!" Ward replied as both of Henderson's eyes opened

"He's up!" Benjamin shouted as Henderson quickly stood up, splashing the acceleration fluid all over the room and started to panic when he realized there were oxygen tubes going into both of his nostrils

"Mr. Henderson! Mr. Henderson! Calm yourself!" Ward shouted as she tried to calm Henderson, but to no avail

"Sarge! Sarge! Yo! Calm your ass down before you hurt yourself!" Hernandez shouted to Henderson as Ward climbed a ladder up to the catwalk that went around the top of the tank where she grabbed Henderson by his horns and made him look her face to face

"YOU CALM YOUR *%$#ING ASS DOWN NOW OR I'M GOING TO %#$#ING PROBE IT!" Ward screamed to him, "DO YOU UNDERSTAND ME SERGEANT?!"

Henderson stopped panicking and nodded

"Good." Ward said, "Now hold still, this is going to sting for little bit."

Ward gently took hold of one of the oxygen tubes and slowly began to pull it out of Henderson's nose before it finally came out with a loud pop noise while Henderson grunted

"See now that wasn't as bad you thought it was going to be was it?" Ward said to him and he nodded as she moved to pull the other tube out of his other nostril as Benjamin and Turner looked at the talons he had on his feet through the glass of the tanks

"Jesus Christ look at those! That's some freaking Jurassic Park-level shit right there!" Turner said to Benjamin quietly, so Henderson, who could hear them quite clearly, couldn't hear them

"You two aren't making it any better for him." Ward said to them as she finished pulling the second oxygen tube out of Henderson's nose

Henderson snorted, blowing out some of the acceleration fluid as Ward pulled out her pen light and shined it into Henderson's right eye to check it's dilation before doing the same for the left eye

"Are you feeling anything in your wings right now?" Ward asked him as she turned off her pen light and looked at his right wings

Henderson shook his head

"Don't worry that's normal, you'll get feeling in them in a short while." Ward said to him, "Can you open your mouth for me now?"

Henderson opened his mouth as wide as he could, revealing his top teeth as Ward shined her pen light into it while holding her nose closed with her other hand

"Sharp teeth, bad smell...everything's normal in there." She replied, "Mr. Dean, can you please drain the tank while your over there along with lowering the tank walls?"

"Am I doing this right?" Henderson asked Ward telepathically

"If you mean if I can hear you in my head, yes and you better get used to that because that's the only way you're going to be able to communicate with humans until you get a translation collar." She replied

Henderson nodded as the acceleration tank began to drain

"What's up with the little antenna things on the sides of his face?" Turner whispered to Ward as she slid down the ladder

"I think those are just for looks." She replied, "I just now noticed this but his eyes are yellow."

"Yeah they were like that before." Turner said to her

"I've only heard about people having it, but never actually seen them." She replied, "The engies are going have some problems designing armor for him with those horns and large spines on his back."

"Can't you please not discuss that while I'm right here." Henderson said to her telepathically, "And yes my eyes were naturally yellow, that's why people called me dragon eyes when I was in high school, which is kind of ironic now..."

"What about his family?" Jasmine asked Ward with a whisper as the walls of the tank lowered and Henderson hopped down to the floor, making it shake

"We'll worry about that later, but now be quiet because he probably still hears us anyway." She replied

"I can, but I'm pretending I can't." Henderson thought to himself,

"This is going to a long and bumpy road."

Henderson looked at this tail for the first time, which had tail flaps at the end of it that looked oddly similar to a Night Fury's

"A very long and a very bumpy road." He thought

"Well come on, we might as well go ahead and introduce you to the others." Ward replied when Hiccup came in through door

"Hey I just want to tell you guys that the Roman-!" He said before he saw Henderson, "Why didn't you guys call me to tell me he was up?!"

"We were kind of busy and we're just about to take him to the hangar, so you can help us with that." Turner replied

Hiccup nodded

"How are you feeling?" He asked Henderson

"Dizzy, tired, pains all over my body, and on top of that, I'm hungry." He replied

"Do you even know what he eats?" Hiccup asked Ward

"He's probably carnivorous judging by his teeth, so we'll start with fish." She replied, "Well lets getting going, because you need to lay down and get some rest so you'll gain strength."

Henderson nodded and slowly began to walk toward the door with his squad, Ward, and Hiccup

"Just take it slow and steady at first and you'll be okay." Ward said to Henderson, who nodded

"Slow and steady...got it." He replied to himself, "At least I'm not the first one to go through this."

Author's Notes

I am really hoping to get this story done before HTTYD2 comes out the on the 13th and I have so many ideas to use in the next story that isn't funny.

23. Chapter 23

Chapter Twenty-Three: Victory and Defeat

USAS Patton

**Hangar Bay **

**A Few Seconds Later **

When Henderson and his entourage entered the hangar, the 502nd and dragon riders were helping load wounded onto VTOLs to be taken to the USAS Farmington

"Watch your head!" Benjamin shouted to Henderson as they came through the hangar entrance which Henderson had to duck his head and lower his body to get through as the other post-human dragon and the dragon riders noticed their arrival making Henderson a bit nervous as Barnes and Karlson approached them

"Do you guys need help?" Barnes asked them with his translation collar

"No I think we're good, we're just going to take him into the cargo bay so he can rest." Ward replied

Barnes nodded and looked up at Henderson

"We'll do introductions later, but for now, welcome to the 502nd." Barnes said to him

Henderson nodded before Barnes left while Karlson stayed with them as they made their way to the cargo bay

"It takes some time, but you'll get used to it eventually." Karlson said to Henderson

Henderson snorted

"I'm more concerned about my daughter right now than getting used to this." He said to him

"Well I can't help you there, I got married after I was turned." Karlson replied as Calvin and Emily stuck their heads out of the cargo bay

"Is that your son?" Henderson asked him

Karlson nodded

"Yeah that's my Calvin." Karlson said, "The Deadly Nadder is Emily Wensky, his girlfriend."

"You guys need help?" Calvin asked them

"No they're fine." Karlson replied before Calvin and Emily disappeared back into the cargo bay

"Isn't she the one that was puking all the over the place earlier?" Henderson asked him

"Yeah that was her." Karlson replied, "She's feeling better now though and she's very nice once you get to know her."

"So Hiccup told us that the Romans here on Berk surrendered, so I guess that means we're going home...right?" Jasmine asked Karlson

"Yeah, but we're going to see what Stoick wants to do with all the Outcasts we have in the brig before we go anywhere." He replied while on the brig, Alvin was sticking his hands through the bars of cell with the stolen keycard and used it to unlock the cell door, which he quietly pushed open before sneaking his way up the aisle while

ordering for the other captured Outcasts on the brig to remain silent as he approached the door of the Warden's Officer where the Warden was sitting at his desk doing paperwork while the other guards were nowhere in sight

"This is too easy." Alvin thought to himself before he forced his way through the door, catching the Warden off-guard although he immediately activated the alarm by smashing the button he had on desk before reaching for his holster to get his gun, but Alvin tackled him and began punching him repeatedly in the face, eventually knocking him unconscious and Alvin immediately rushed to the brig control console and began to flip the switches that he guessed correctly, opened the other cell doors, freeing the other Outcasts, who attacked the Guards as they tried to reach the Warden's Office while Alvin went to the nearby gun-rack and pulled a shotgun off of it that he test fired into the Warden and killed him

"Now this is a weapon!" Alvin shouted as he went to join his men, "Lets get off this damn ship!"

Meanwhile back in the hangar, Henderson had finally found a comfortable posture to lay down in when the alarms started to go off

"You got be kidding me..." Henderson thought to himself as Karlson, Tesla, Calvin, Emily, and Sheva got up

"You three stay here with them, we're going to go see what's going on! Karlson shouted as he and Tesla ran out while Henderson stood and started to make his own to hangar

"Where do you think you're going?!" Ward asked him

"I want to know what's going on!" He replied

"No you need to lay down and get your rest!" Ward said to him, "NOW LAY DOWN!"

Henderson snorted, but hesitantly laid down and put his head on the floor while the rest of Bravo Squad collected their weapons, but stayed in the cargo bay as an APM Officer came on over the PA System

combat military and security personnel report to their assigned nations and prepare to repel attackers!"

"GENERAL QUARTERS! GENERAL QUARTERS! Major breakout in progress on the brig, all The Officer shouted before cutting off

"It's those damn Outcasts again! Those guys never give up!" Jasmine shouted as Karlson rushed into the hangar

"Calvin! Emily! Sheva! Henderson! You get out here and head up to the Farmington where you'll be safe!" Karlson shouted to them, "Ward you go with them!"

"I don't even know if I can fly right now!" Henderson replied as he stood up and nearly stumbled

"Well you'll have to try then!" Karlson said to him

Henderson sighed, but nodded

"And Henderson if anything goes wrong out there, keep them safe!" Karlson said to him as he motioned to Calvin and Sheva

Henderson nodded as Bravo Squad started to climbed onto him followed by Ward

"What the hell are we supposed to hang onto too?!" Jasmine asked

"Here use this!" Calvin replied as he grabbed some rope with his mouth and threw it up to Jasmine

"Thanks kid!" She replied as she used some of it to tie herself to one of Henderson's spines as a VTOL, carrying Reaper and Aberly landed in the hangar

"What the hell is going on here?!" Reaper asked Barnes as he and Aberly jumped out of the VTOL

"The Outcasts are breaking out of the brig and we're preparing to fight them if they decide to come in here." He replied as Henderson, Ward, Bravo Squad, Calvin, Emily, and Sheva left the cargo bay and prepared to take off as Karlson rejoined Tesla

"You two should probably go with them." Barnes said as he motioned to Henderson, Calvin, Emily, and Sheva

"But we just got here!" Aberly replied

"Yeah and neither of you have guns right now." Barnes said to him, "And not to mention one of you are a head of state."

Reaper sighed

"We'll go." He said hesitantly, "Come on Aberly, we have a flight to catch! You guys wait up, we're coming too!"

"Hurry up then!" Henderson shouted to him as Reaper and Aberly climbed onto Calvin and Sheva

"Okay I can do this...I can do this." Henderson thought to himself

"Well are we going or what?!" Reaper asked Henderson

"Don't rush him!" Ward replied before Henderson took a deep breath

"Well here goes nothing!" Henderson shouted as he ran as fast as he could, extended his wings and jumped into the air as he left the hangar and started flapping his wings to gain altitude while Calvin, Emily, and Sheva followed

"You're doing good so far! Keep it up!" Calvin shouted to him, "Just don't keep flapping your wings like that! You'll tire yourself out!"

Henderson nodded and began to flap his wings more slowly as he leveled out

"I got this...I *$%$ing got this!" Henderson thought to himself

Meanwhile back on the Patton, the 502nd and dragon riders were finished with their battle preparations and were building barricades around the hangar entrance with the help of security guards and a few APMSF Stormtroopers and Vikings while the last medievac VTOLs took off out of the hangar behind them as the sounds of gunfire grew closer

"No prisoner taking this time! We wipe these *$%$ers out once and for all, so we can go home!" Barnes shouted while Stoick nodded in agreement as loaded a clip into an assault rifle while Ramirez in his F-45 hovered behind them with both of his pulse cannons aimed at the doors

"They're coming!" A Wounded Security Guard shouted as he shambled his way into the hangar and climbed over one of the barricades where an APMSF Medic started to tend to his wounds while several other security guards and marines followed him, still firing their weapons at the approaching Outcasts as they fell back into the hangar and jumped over the barricades as the first Outcasts followed shortly behind them into the hangar, blindly firing their guns

"OPEN FIRE!" Barnes screamed as he and everybody else in the hangar behind the barricades began to fire into the Outcasts as they swarmed into the hangar with their bodies quickly piling up in front of the barricades, but with every step, they came closer and closer to reach the barricades

"They're closing the distance! Get ready for close quarters combat!" Karlson shouted to the Stormtroopers while one Outcast leaped over the barricade and tried to attack Zoey, but was stopped short when Toothless intercepted him by whipping him with his tail and throwing him through the air back behind the barricades

"Thanks!" Zoey shouted to Toothless, who nodded as more Outcasts started to leap over the barricades and engage the Americans on the other side and several went after Barnes, who quickly started to dispatch them as Alvin came into the hangar wielding his shotgun which was now loaded with high-velocity synthetic tungsten slug rounds he had gotten from a dead Marine

"Leave that Night Fury for me, I have a score I need to settle with it." Alvin told to Savage as he fired one of the slug rounds into Barnes that penetrated through part of his armor and struck him making the Night Fury wither in pain, "You think I would I forget about you after you killed my dragon?!"

Barnes whipped around and shot a plasma blast at Alvin, who rolled out of the way allowing it to hit Savage instead, completely disintegrating him

"Nice try!" Alvin shouted as he pumped his shotgun and fired another slug around at Barnes, who dodged it before ramming Alvin in the stomach, throwing back into one of the barricades and causing him to lose his grip on the shotgun, which slid across the hangar floor and

disappeared into the smoke that was being generated by burning debris while Barnes savagely attacked Alvin, repeatedly lunging him at his face while Alvin dodged his attacks

"WHY! WON'! YOU! DIE?!" Barnes shouted to Alvin before he punched him in the nose and kicked Barnes off him and got up before running in that direction that his shotgun disappeared in

"I don't *$#$ing think so!" Barnes screamed as he chased after Alvin as he found his shotgun and turned to shoot at Barnes as he leaped at him

"EAT THIS!" Alvin shouted as he fired a slug round into Barnes' chest, but the round shattered when it impacted the thick chestplate although the velocity off the round was enough to still Barnes flying back through the smoke, landing on his back and out of breath as Alvin approached as he loaded his last slug round into the shotgun and placed his foot on Barnes' chest as he aimed the shotgun as his face, but before he could pull the trigger, a wounded Thornado sonic blasted Alvin and knocked him off Barnes

"Hurry up and get up!" Thornado shouted to Barnes as he tried to help him get up while Alvin stood and aimed his shotgun at them

"I don't think so you overgrown bladder!" Alvin shouted before fired the shotgun into Thornado, sending the slug round flying through Thornado, mortally wounding him, and splattering his blood all over Barnes

"THORNADO!" Stoick shouted as he charged at Alvin and delivered a powerful punch to his face, breaking the Outcasts' lower jaw and sending teeth flying out of his mouth before delivering another blow to Alvin's gut with his foot while Barnes after realizing what happened, rammed Alvin and threw him across the hangar and into the far right wall, breaking Alvin's back and paralyzing him as Stoick made his way toward him, grabbing a large wrench from a toolbox while Alvin laughed at him as he began to cough up his own blood

"So you are you really going to ki-" Alvin said, but didn't get to finish his sentence as Stoick delivered a killing blow to Alvin's skull with the wrench, cracking it open and then started to hit the dead Outcast repeatedly as Barnes tried to pull him away

"Stoick! He's dead, it's over!" Barnes screamed as the remaining Outcasts were dispatched by the 502nd as reinforcements began to arrive in VTOLs while Hiccup went to check on Thornado, who was already dead

Meanwhile Henderson, Calvin, Emily, and Sheva were still on their way to the USAS Farmington with Reaper, Aberly, Ward, and the rest of Bravo Squad

"I think we're about half-way there now!" Calvin shouted

"Thank god, I'm starting to get tired again." Henderson though to himself before Emily was snagged in a flying

"EMILY!" Calvin screamed as he dived after her into a ravine while Reaper tried to force him back up by pulling on his horns

"CALVIN! GOD DAMMIT! JUST WHEN I THOUGHT THIS WAS ALL ABOUT OVER!" Henderson shouted while Sheva flew after her brother

"NIEN! NIEN NIEN!" Aberly screamed

"You got to be kidding me!" Henderson shouted, "HOLD BACK THERE GUYS!"

Henderson dove after Calvin and Sheva as the former landed to save Emily, who was trying to break free from the net

"Hold still Emily I'll get you out of there!" Calvin replied as Reaper dismounted from him and saw the Roman Praetorian Guardsmen and dragons on the cliffs above them

"OH SHIT! AMBUSH!" He shouted as Sheva was knocked down to the ground by a Roman Typhoonmerang while Henderson landed with Bravo Squad, who quickly dismounted, but were almost immediately swarmed by Praetorian Guardsmen

"There's too many of them!" Jasmine screamed as Henderson was snagged by steel cable net launched from a ballista while Reaper was attacked by Casca himself, who knocked him off balance with a nearby plasma blast before pinning him down to the ground while Calvin was attacked and pinned to the ground by two Zipplebacks while a Praetorian Guardsmen quickly placed a muzzle on him as Bravo Squad and Ward were attacked and knocked unconscious by a Thunderdrum before they were restrained by other Praetorian Guardsmen

"And I was really expecting this to be harder, but here you are, General Reaper, commander of the infamous 1st Stormtrooper Legion and current president of the United States." Casca said to Reaper

"&$#$ off Julius Ceaser!" He replied

Casca snorted and headbutted Reaper, knocking him unconscious

"Hurry up and get them all tied up! We leave to Europe immediately! Casca shouted, "I'm taking this one myself!"

"Calvin! Calvin!" Emily shouted to Calvin, who couldn't reply audibly because of his muzzle

"Everything is going to be okay Emily! Just remain calm!" Calvin replied as Casca looked at him

"On second thought leave Mr. Calvin here, the Americans will need somebody to blame for the disappearance of their leader." Casca said to him, "Just be sure to tie him down real well so we can get a head start."

"Yes General Casca!" He replied

"CALVIN!" Emily screamed before a muzzle was put on her as a Monstrous Nightmare grabbed her net and took off while an enraged Calvin threw off the Zipplebacks holding him down and ignited his fire-jacket and tried to go after her, but Casca plasma blasted him, knocking him back to the ground

"Nice try." Casca said as he approached the still enraged, but

seriously injured Monstrous Nightmare

"I swear I will hunt you down and rip your %$%ing head off you son of #$#$!" Calvin shouted to him telepathically as the two Zipplebacks kept him pinned to the ground

"Good luck with that without your wings, break them." Casca said to the two Zipplebacks who grabbed a hold of Calvin's wings with their heads and snapped them making Calvin scream in the pain

"Good bye Mr. Calvin...and don't worry we'll take care of your friends for you." Casca said before he and his men took off with their prisoners, leaving Calvin by himself in the ravine

24. Chapter 24

Chapter Twenty-Four: Dark Times

**USAS Patton **

Hangar Bay

**An Hour Later **

The 502nd and the dragon riders were gathering the bodies of dead Outcasts and throwing them into a pile while Karlson was on the radio with the captain of the USAS Farmington trying to find the whereabouts of his children

"What do you mean they never arrived?!" Karlson shouted, "I sent them your way!"

"I may have sir, but they never arrived in our hangar and we haven't heard anything from them on our comm system." The Captain replied

"What is it Karlson?" Wensky asked Karlson

"The Farmington is saying that Calvin, Sheva, or Emily didn't make it to them and they don't know where they are." He replied

"WHAT?!" Wensky shouted

"Exactly what I'm thinking." He replied

"Barnes! Me and Wensky are going out to look for our kids because they never made it to the Farmington!" Karlson shouted to Barnes

"What do you mean they didn't make it?!"He asked them

"The captain said they never arrived in their hangar, so something must have happened." Karlson replied

"Well I'm coming with you then." Barnes said to him

"Then we are too!" Hiccup replied as he and the other dragon riders mounted up

"Lets go then!" Karlson shouted as they took off out of the hangar and flew toward the USAS Farmington following the path that Calvin, Sheva, Emily, and the others should have followed

"I'm not seeing anything Karl!" Barnes shouted to him

"Me neither!" Astrid replied, "Are you sure they went this way?"

"I'm certain because it's the most direct path!" Karlson said when Stormfly noticed something in a ravine they were flying over there

"DOWN THERE!" Stormfly shouted as everybody looked down

"CALVIN!" Karlson screamed as he dove down to check on his son while the others cautiously followed

"Dad..." Calvin said telepathically and weakly to his father as he landed and ran to him

"I'm here Calvin! What happened, where's your sister and Emily and the others!" Karlson asked him

"It was...it was that Casca, they ambushed us, snagged Emily in a net and I was stupid enough to follow her and took the others with me, they were on us so fast we couldn't do anything..." He replied telepathically as the others landed behind Karlson, who ripped the muzzle off of Calvin, so he could breath more freely

"It's all my fault, it's all my fault." Calvin cried as Karlson sighed

"What happened?!" Barnes shouted

"Casca and his men ambushed them! The men you should have killed before this even happened!" Karlson shouted at him

"Dad...it hurts." Calvin said to his father weakly, taking his attention away from Barnes and the others as they soaked in what had happened

"GET EVERYBODY TOGETHER, WE'RE GOING AFTER THEM!" Barnes screamed

"It's too late for that, they're probably long gone by now..." Karlson replied as Calvin faded out of consciousness, "They were mostly just still kids...and I'm the one who sent them out here."

"Karlson there was no way we knew they were going to be out here, so it's not your fault." Barnes said to him, "Now come on, we need to get Calvin back to the Patton before...before..."

"I know." Karlson replied, "Hookfang...Snotlout can you please..."

"No need to ask." Snotlout replied as he and Hookfang helped Karlson lift up his wounded son

"Some victory this is turning out to be..." Astrid said quietly

**Cape Girardeau, Missouri **

**APM Command Bunker **

**Later that Night **

Paxton was with Generals Smict and Conrad, the latter of which was holographic, as the Secretary of Defense, now learned that he was now the President of the United States due to the largest breach of national security in American history

"How the hell did this happen?!" Paxton shouted

"They slipped in under our radar using the canyons and ravines that snake their way through Berk's mountains and ambushed them as they just happened to fly over them." Conrad replied, "And then they used the canyons and ravines again to escape before we even knew it happened."

"Why didn't give them any escorts?!" Paxton asked

"Because there were no available fighters at the time sir." Conrad replied as Paxton laid his head back against his chair

"Who should we be holding responsible for this travesty?" Paxton asked them

"The sensor operators on the Farmington, because they should've been doing a more thorough job and they weren't." Conrad replied, "And blaming them is better than pinning it on the 502nd and the 1st Legion, who are by all means strategically important to our war effort and losing them is not an option."

Paxton nodded

"General Smict, I want to reformat your plans to attack Rome and attack Britannia instead." He said

"Sir?" Smict asked him

"You heard me, taking Britannia is a better choice because it's closer to the rift so it's easier to reinforce if something goes wrong and it also largely removes the threat of the Romans and Blackwater launching bomb raiding against our forces in the Barbaric Archipelago while also giving us a base to bomb their installations on the mainland and to launch our invasion." He replied

Smict nodded

"Then what about Rome sir?" Conrad asked him

"It's time will come sooner or later." He replied

**The Isle of Berk **

**The Village **

Everything was quiet as the Hairy Hooligans returned to their village, which had been completely devastated with almost all the buildings either being completely destroyed or damaged in one way or another while war dead from both sides littered almost every street alongside the burning, twisted hulks of destroyed tanks and other war machines

"Dear gods it'll take us years to clean this all up!" A Viking shouted as he and his family looked at their badly damaged house in disbelief while Stoick, Gobber, and Spitelout walked past them

"Get whatever carts you can find and start gathering up all these dead Romans and mercenaries before they start to rot." Stoick said to Spitelout and Gobber

"What about our dead and the Americans'?" Gobber asked

"Pick up our dead as well, but we'll let the Americans collect theirs on their own as they won't be happy if threw them into carts." Stoick replied

Gobber and Spitelout nodded

"So when do we start reconstruction?" Spitelout asked him

"Tomorrow, but for now we mourn for our losses and gather what's left of our lives that the war hasn't already destroyed." Stoick replied as a formation of American cargo planes flew over Berk dropping supplies and paratroopers in their wake

"Then later we'll do the same to Rome than the Romans did here and the rest Archipelago." He added

USAS Patton

**Hangar Bay **

Everything was silent in the hangar as Barnes and the F-45s returned from their search for General Casca and his dragons

"Did you find anything?" Samantha asked him

"Not a damn thing!" He replied, "How's Calvin?"

"Tesla told me that he's doing better, but still he's pretty badly beaten and his wings maybe mangled beyond all hope of recovery." Samantha said to him

"This is all my fault, I'm the one who told Karlson to send them out there and then I'm the one who told my dad to go with them..." He replied, "What was I thinking..."

"Barnes there was no way you and Karlson could have known that they were out there." Samantha said to him

"But what if our kids had been with them Sam?!" Barnes shouted, "They would've been captured too and...and..."

Samantha wrapped her wings around Barnes as he started cry while Karlson came into hangar and saw them and shook his head as an APMSF

Officer approached

"What is it?" Karlson asked him

"Sir, we've received new orders from command, we are to stay on Berk until further notice." He replied

Karlson sighed

"Did you really have to tell me this?!" Karlson roared at him, "I just lost one of my kids and I'm possibly about to lose the other one! Do you really think I'm in the mood for this?!"

The APMSF Officer ran away in terror as Karlson continued his way to the cargo bay were Tesla was

"What was that about?" She asked him

"Nothing..." He replied as he laid down with her

"What's the new on Cal-" She said

"He's still showing signs of recovery, but they still don't know if he's going to make it." Karlson replied, "I can't help but to feel responsible for this Tesla, if they had stayed with us none of this could have possibly happened."

Tesla cuddled closer to Karlson

"At least we still have each other right?" She asked him

"Yes I guess we do." He replied with a weak smile, "But when I find that Roman mother %$%$er I'm going to gut and roast him alive."

"Get in line..." Wensky replied quietly as he was holding a restless Katie with his right wing

**Rome **

Gene Corp Main Facility

**An Hour Later **

Cameron Yates was sitting in his office while his top commander stood behind him briefing on the defeat at the Barbaric Archipelago

"Sir the entire Archipelago was a bad idea from the start, the Romans were horribly prepared for it, they're weapons didn't come anyway to par, even against the Vikings." The Blackwater General said to Cameron, "We should have spent more time modernizing the Roman military and improving our forces before we attacked, but now we've lost several of our best divisions, several of our best officers, and tons of equipment and ammunition in exchange for absolutely nothing."

"But in the end we did capture the American president and several other high-value targets did we not?" Cameron asked him

"Yes, but that is only a small victory compared to what we've lost in that campaign." He replied, "It'll take us months if not YEARS to

recover from this and we defiantly do not have that time because it's only a matter of time until the entire might of the Coalition is bearing down on us."

Cameron sighed, but he in the end he knew his general was right

"Do you have any suggestions on what we should do?" He asked him

"Well for one thing, we need to cancel all plans of further expansion of Rome's borders to save up on manpower and material and then second we need to start digging in as deep as we can and develop better weapons to fill in the firepower gap." He replied, "We'll also need to increase recruitment levels for the Praetorians and began producing more dragons."

"That will cost us a lot of resources general along with valuable time." Cameron said

"Better than being lynched by the Americans, who are no doubly pissed off beyond all reason right now." The General replied, "We're also already starting to get reports of Coalition aircraft breaching our airspace around Britannia and Hibernia and to a limited extend, Scandinavia, which is only a sign of things to come."

Doctor Hatfield entered the office

"This is not the time Dr. Hatfield, I'm kind of busy." Cameron said to her

"But sir this is important, the dark energy reactor has been completed and is fully online." She replied

"A dark energy what?!" The General asked

"Can you please leave us General? We'll continue our discussion later." Cameron replied

The General nodded before leaving Cameron's office

"So nothing went wrong?" Cameron asked her

"Absolutely nothing, we are now in possession of this world's first fully operational dark energy reactor." She replied, "Which also means we've done something that even the United States in all of it's technological superiority has failed to accomplish."

"So how much power is that thing pumping out right now?" Cameron asked her

"If our readings are correct, it's generating enough electricity to power the entire continent for 500 years." She replied, "More than any nuclear plant currently operational in the Coalition Verse and with the added bonus of no waste product."

"What's the catch?" Cameron asked her

"Although we managed to bring the reactor online without incident, the risk of an dark energy explosion still persists and it is something that can't be ignored because even the slightest change in

the reactor's environment could cause it to go unstable." She replied, "Which means if the Coalition drops anything big enough to penetrate this facility and damages that reactor, we're going to be in some really big trouble."

Cameron nodded

"Well so far so good, keep continuing your work." He replied

Hatfield nodded and left the office

"Finally some good news..." Cameron said as he slouched down in his chair while the General came back into his office

**Location Unknown **

After being knocked out by a Typhoonmerang after arriving at a Blackwater Airfield in an failed attempt to escape, Henderson regained consciousness tied down to the floor of a cargo hold of a large aircraft with Sheva in front of him facing toward him

"Thank god you're awake!" Sheva said to him telepathically

"Where...where are we?" He asked her

"After your tried to escape, they decided to transport us to a different location." She replied

"Figures..." Henderson said as he tried to break his restraints

"Don't even bother, I've already tried that, those restraints are made of reinforced tungsten, nothing is going to break those." Sheva replied

"Dammit!" Henderson said, "What did they do to the others?"

"They put them on another plane, but we're heading to the same place. But they're taking the President somewhere else though." Sheva replied, "...I'm scared."

"It's alright to be afraid kid because I am too right now." Henderson said

"Don't you have a kid?" Sheva asked him

"I do..." He replied, "What's your name?"

"Sheva." She replied

"Jayden Henderson, nice to meet you." Henderson said to her

"I'm sorry about my brother...he can be a bit hard headed at times...but now he's...gone." She replied before she started to cry through her muzzle

"Hey you two stop whatever your doing back there!" A Blackwater Soldier shouted at them from the front of the aircraft

"I'm sure Calvin is going to be okay Sheva." Henderson said to her

"How do you know?!" She replied, "Did you see what Casca did to him?!"

"Just don't think about it okay, the last thing you want to do right now is panic!" Henderson said to her as a guard appeared from the front of the aircraft

"Both of you shut up! Including you!" The Guard shouted as he struck Sheva with her baton making her cry out in pain

"HEY LEAVE HER ALONE!" Henderson shouted at him telepathically

"What are you going to do about it?!" The Guard shouted to him as he began to repeatedly strike Henderson in the head with the baton while Sheva cried before the guard finally stopped and returned to the front of the aircraft

"Asshole..." Henderson thought to himself

"Are you alright?!" Sheva cried to him telepathically

"I'm fine, but thanks for your concern." He replied, "What about you?"

Sheva nodded

"Sheva, you have my word. No matter what it takes, I will get you and Emily back home to your parents." Henderson said to her

"You promise?" She asked him

"I promise." He replied

25. Chapter 25

Chapter Twenty-Five: Recovering

**USAS Patton **

**Medical Bay **

**Sometime Later **

Calvin gasped for air as he regained consciousness in one of the back rooms of the medical bay of the USAS Patton and he realized he was hooked up to various life support and other medical equipment, but yet he remained calm as a doctor and four aides rushed into the chamber

"Holy crap he's awake!" One the of the Doctor's Aides shouted as Calvin painfully lifted up his head when he began to remember what had happened in the ravine

"Emily! Sheva!" Calvin screamed as he started to try to get up

"He's having a panic attack! Get him tied down! Quickly!" Another Doctor's Aide screamed as they rushed to restrain Calvin while the Doctor grabbed a hold of his horns and looked Calvin directly in the eyes

"Calvin! Calvin! Calm down! We know what happened to you and the others in the ravine! But we need you to calm down before you hurt yourself even more!" The Doctor screamed at him as the other doctors tied down his wings and legs as Calvin finally started to calm himself as laid his head back down before he started weeping

"Remove the restraints...he's had enough problems." The Doctors said

"Should we get his parents?" One of his Aides asked him

"Tell them he's awake, but tell them to wait a while before they try to visit." He replied as the other doctors began to remove the restraints as the Doctor gently stroked the top of Calvin's head before looking at all the medical equipment, "Get all this shit out of here, most of it doesn't even need to be in here."

"Yes Doctor." The Aide replied as the other aides began to disassemble most of the medical equipment

"Calvin...Calvin." The Doctor said to Calvin patiently he knelled down next to him, "I know you lost Emily and your sister and that they meant everything to you, but doing this is not going to save them."

Calvin stopped crying and looked at the Doctor

"In a few hours we're going to take you to Area 51 where they're going to do a complete reconstruction surgery on your wings, which will hopefully fix them." He said to him, "Then after that you'll have to go through a few months or so of physical therapy, but after that, at least physically, you should be okay."

"Then I can hunt Casca and his thugs down..." Calvin replied telepathically

"All I can say to that is join the club." The Doctor said to him, "Do you want to see your parents now or later?"

"Are they mad at me?" Calvin asked him

"Not that I saw." The Doctor replied as Calvin tried to get up, but stumbled and fell back down and then tried again, but with the same result

"God dammit..." Calvin thought to himself

"It looks like your wings maybe broken more than we thought, we'll do another X-Ray after we get you to your parents." He replied

"How am I supposed to see my parents if I can't move?! I need my wings for walking as well as flying!" Calvin shouted

"Calm down, we'll get somebody to help you." The Doctor replied

"If they can't fix my wings doc, does that mean I'm going to...die?" Calvin asked him

"Don't say that kid, we'll figure out something." He replied

"Doctor just be honest with me, you know what the Vikings say about dragons that can't fly." Calvin said to him and he immediately grabbed a hold of Calvin's horns again and forced him to look him straight in the eyes

"You are NOT going to die! You hear me! I don't care what the Vikings say, they don't have our understanding of autonomy or the technology!", He shouted at Calvin, "Even if it means we have find a way to turn you into a human or another dragon species, we are not going to let you die because your parents have suffered too much already!"

Calvin nodded as the Doctor released his horns

"Now lets go see your parents." He said

**Cape Girardeau, Missouri **

**Common Pleas Courthouse **

The newly sworn-in President Fettle had taken Reaper's place at the Coalition Leadership Council as the Coalition Leaders once again assembled to discuss their next move in the war

"President Fettle, on the behalf of the European Federation and the other members of the Coalition, we give you our condolences about the loss of your predecessor, even if we didn't always agree with his methods of doing things." Said the Prime Minister of the European Federation, Alberta Linto

"Thank you Mrs. Linto, but your condolences won't be enough to end this war." He replied and Linto nodded

"Lets begin shall we then?" Asked Russian President, Artur Rusnak as he and the other Coalition leaders sat down around the conference table

"Okay first things first, if we're going to be using the Barbaric Archipelago as a staging area for our operations, we need to start building bases there, but the problem is though that the Barbaric Archipelago is hardly a suitable place to be building the kind of bases we're going to need." Said Netanel Bronfman, President of Israel, "So I suggest we expand to Iceland as well, so that we have more room to build and expand if needed."

Paxton nodded

"Agreed, we'll also need to devise a plan to suppress Gene Corp's operations on the mainland, primarily targeting their production of post-human dragons." He said, "And I'm afraid the 502nd, 1st Legion, and the Vikings' dragon riders won't be enough even though they're our only experts."

"Indeed, because Gene Corp likely won't hesitate for a second to start turning our soldiers into dragons as they capture them and then

turning them against us with mind control." Artur replied, "Which is why we will have to assemble a special task force to attack their operations both covertly and conventionally with the 502nd ,1st Legion, and dragon riders at it's forefront."

"Do you think Stoick will let us do that?" Paxton asked him

"I don't know, but it's worth the try." He replied

"Well lets get back to the subject on hand, we need to decide where we're going to hit the Romans and Gene Corp first." Bronfman said to them

"Agreed!" Linto replied

"At the moment, I have General Smict and his command staff drawing down the plans for an invasion of the British Isles because they'll be a good place start since they're relatively close to the Barbaric Archipelago and will provide us with a good staging area for an direct assault on the European mainland." Paxton said, "And taking it will also largely remove the threat of any installations we build on Iceland or the Barbaric Archipelago of being raided by bombers."

"I agree, Britain and Ireland are good places to start with." Bronfman replied while the other Coalition Leaders agreed, "But if we're going to invade them, we need neutralize what's left of the Roman Navy along with any aerial presence."

"You make it sound easy." Paxton said

**USAS Patton **

**Hangar Bay **

Barnes and Samantha were both helping Calvin walk into the hangar bay where his parents were eagerly waiting

"Thanks you two." Calvin said to Barnes and Samantha

"No problem." He replied as Karlson and Tesla ran toward him

"Calvin! Thank god you're alive!" Tesla cried as he started to nuzzle Calvin as the Doctor followed

"How is he?" Karlson asked the Doctor telepathically

The Doctor motioned for Karlson to follow him to the farthest corner

"His wings are in worst shape than we previously thought, I usually like to be optimistic, but the chances of him being able to fly again, even with the reconstruction surgery are to say at the least, very slim." The Doctor said to Karlson

"Isn't there anything else you can do?!" He asked him

"Well I did a blood test on him earlier and he came up negative with nanites." The Doctor replied

"What does that have to do with anything?!" Karlson asked him

"It means he has none of Gene Corp's nanites floating around in his bloodstream, which means we could hypothetically load up some nanites with human DNA and inject them into him and..." The Doctor replied before Karlson finished his sentence

"Turn him human." He said

"Yes, but we'll leave that as a last resort if the reconstruction surgery doesn't work." The Doctor said to him, "Which I'm hoping to god it will, because the last thing I want to do is take your son away."

"But it'll also mean he'll have a chance to have a better and happier life." He replied

"Well I think he won't be truly happy until he finds Sheva and Emily." The Doctor said to him, "But for now just enjoy what time you have left with him, because you never know, it could be the last."

Karlson nodded before turning around and heading back to Calvin and Tesla as Wensky came over to them

"Mr. Wensky..." Calvin said to him

Calvin...it's good to see you're still with us." He replied as Calvin hung his head

"Calvin, it's okay, there was nothing you could have done." Wensky said to him, "Stop trying to blame yourself, because it's only making Casca's victory even more complete."

Calvin nodded

"Thank you Mr. Wensky and I promise I'll do whatever I can to get her back." He said to him

"I know you will." Wensky said to him

"Hey little man! How are you doing?" Karlson asked Calvin as he nuzzled his son

"Better I guess..." He replied

"We'll take him from here you two." Karlson said to Barnes and Samantha as he and Tesla lifted up their son and began taking him back to the cargo bay

"Why did this had to happen to him, he's a good kid." Wensky said to Barnes

"If my dad was here, he would say that's the way war is." He replied, "All we can do is hope that he's make full recovery."

"Barnes, you know good as well there is no such thing as full recovery with something like that. He's going to be scarred, both physically and mentally, for the rest of his life." Wensky said to him, "And who knows what they're doing with my Emily and

Sheva..."

"We'll get them back, I know we will." He replied, "And hopefully we'll get the added bonus of killing Casca as well."

"Amen to that..." Wensky said to him, "So what about Anna and Preston?"

"They're in the chapel right now getting married." He replied

"One hell of a time to get married." Wensky said to him

"Well at least it's something good." He replied

**Location Unknown **

Henderson and Sheva had both managed to fall asleep by the time when the plane carrying them landed, waking both of them

"Oh god...we're landing!" Sheva said to Henderson telepathically

"Remain calm Sheva and just hope they don't separate us!" Henderson told her telepathically

Sheva nodded as the plane came to an halt and the back doors started to open

"Hurry up and get these two unloaded!" A Gene Corp Security Guard shouted as he four others walked onto the plane on the ramp as several of them started to untie Henderson from the floor while another one but put a shock collar around his neck with four leather leashes connected to it which he and three other Guards grabbed a hold of and forced Henderson to stand up and began trying to pull him outside, but he resisted by pulling his head back before one them activated the shock collar, sending several volts of electricity into his body and knocking the wind out of him as they dragged him followed by Sheva while the others were including Emily were unloaded from the other plane when Henderson saw that his entire squad had been turned into dragon

"YOU SONS OF *%$%$es!" Henderson shouted at the Guards as he put all his strength into pulling back against the Guards, only for the shock collar to be reactivated again, sending a even more powerful electrical charge into his body and bringing Henderson to his knees in pain

"Henderson!" Sheva screamed before one of the Guards climbed onto Henderson's back and struck him as hard as he could in the back of the head with his cattle prod, knocking him out

"He has a kid! You *%#$#$$!" Sheva screamed at the Guard telepathically

"Well he should have thought about before he tried to resist!" The Guard said as the unconscious Henderson was pulled onto the back of a large truck and fastened down to it's bed with tungsten cables while the Guard approached Sheva and lifted up her head with the cattle-prod

"Leave her alone private! Command wants them unharmed!" The Leading Guard shouted to the Guard

"Yes sir..." He said hesitantly before moving away from Sheva, who broke down and started crying as she was forcibly dragged onto the back onto another truck and tied down herself

"Calvin I'm glad you're not here to see all this..." Sheva thought to herself as a single Gene Corp Scientist climbed onto the truck her with a syringe filled with a some kind of material and injected her with it and knocked her unconscious

26. Chapter 26

Chapter Twenty-Six: Conclusion

**USAS Patton **

The Next Day

Preston and Anna were saying their good byes to Barnes, Samantha, Leon, and Zoey while Karlson helped his son climb into the cargo hold of the VTOL before getting in it himself while Conrad watched, but did nothing

"You know you're disobeying direct orders from the President by going with him." Conrad said to Karlson as he laid down with Calvin as Tesla climbed in with them

"Fettle can go *$#$ himself, us Karlsons stick together." Karlson replied while Preston and Anna boarded the VTOL as the pilots began their pre-takeoff procedures

"I'll tell him you said that." Conrad replied, "Good luck with your operation Calvin."

Calvin nodded as the VTOL's doors started to close as it's engines roared to life before it took off out of the hangar bay followed by it's F-45 escorts

"You think he's going to make it?" Samantha asked Barnes

"Who? Calvin or Preston?" He replied

"Calvin..." Samantha said to him

"If there's anything I've learned from this, is that Calvin is just tough as his dad because by all means he should've been killed." He replied, "So ya, he'll defiantly make it."

"I hope you're right." Samantha said to him

"I'm always right." He replied and Samantha answered with a soft slap to the back of his head with her tail while on the VTOL, Karlson and Tesla were keeping Calvin tucked under their wings as he laid down between them

"So do you think this is going to work?" Calvin asked his father

"Yes, it's going to work Calvin." He replied, remembering the talk he had with the Doctor which he had shared with Tesla, who was trying hard to keep herself from visibly crying, "You're going to be as good as new."

"Okay..." Calvin said as he laid down his down on the floor of the cargo hold

"What are we going to do Karlson?" Tesla asked Karlson

"Hope for the best, it's all we can do." He replied

**Gene Corp Holding Facility **

Henderson regained consciousness laying back-down on a hard concrete floor to the sight of a post-human Skrill staring down at him

"OH MY GOD!" Henderson screamed as he tried to back away from the Skrill, who quickly revealed her identity

"Hey calm your ass down! It's just me!" Ward shouted to Henderson, "They knocked the rest of us out when we got here so they put us in here, I woke up what I think was a minute ago."

Henderson took a few seconds to catch his breath as he looked around the room and saw the others, excluding Sheva scattered across the chamber, still unconscious

"Where's Sheva?!" Henderson asked her

"I don't know, they must have taken her somewhere else." She replied, "Are you okay?"

Henderson sighed

"Yeah...just got a headache from where that guard cocked me on the head." Henderson said to her

"We almost thought he killed you there." She replied, "Come here and let me look at it."

Henderson nodded and came over to Ward, who looked behind his head at where the Guard had struck him with the cattle-prod

"How bad is it?" Henderson asked her as she started to generate a electrical current to light up the area

"You have big bruise there and that's it." She replied, "No biggie and why are you concerned about Sheva? Did something happen between you two on that plane?"

"It's none of your business doc." Henderson said to her as the only visible entry way into the chamber, a large reinforced black steel blast door suddenly opened

"GET DOWN!" Henderson said to Ward telepathically as he pushed her down to the floor, but before he could do anything else four Gene Security Guards rushed in and pointed their weapons at him

"Stay where you are!" One of the Guards shouted as Ward tried to remain hidden behind an unconscious Turner, who was a Zippleback, but was unable to due to the tall spines sticking out from her back and head and was ordered to stand up with Henderson

"Sorry..." Ward whispered to him

"It's okay." He whispered back to her

"So I guess this is it..." She replied telepathically, "They're going to kill us."

Henderson and Ward braced themselves to be cut down by bullets, but the bullets never came as another group of guards entered the chamber, dragging in another Stormcutter dragon with them

"Oh my god I think that's Sheva! What did they do to her?!" Ward said to Henderson telepathically

"Looks like her turned into a Stormcutter for some reason." He replied as the Guards started to unchain the Stormcutter, was so heavily drugged that it was completely submissive, before they left with the other guards before closing the blast door behind them allowing Henderson and Ward to go check on the Stormcutter

"Yeah this is defiantly Sheva, same colors and everything." Ward said to Henderson as he nudged Sheva's face

"She didn't deserve this..." He replied

"None of us deserve this including you." Ward said to him, "Come on lets get her to the corner so she's out of the way."

Henderson nodded and helped Ward push Sheva into the nearby corner where he laid down with her

"I wonder what made them do this?" Henderson asked Ward

"Probably because you were trying to protect her earlier." She replied

"We need to get out of this place...do you have any ideas?" Henderson asked her

"Not a damn clue, they were the first people I've seen to come in here." She replied, "But the point remains, we do need to get out of here one way or another."

"We'll think of something eventually." Henderson said to her

"Well even if we do get out of here, where are we going to go?" She replied

"I don't know, but anything is better than staying here." Henderson said to her, "And I promised I'll do anything to get her back to her family."

"That's a pretty hard promise to keep Sergeant." She replied

"I don't care." He said

"Well you have my support." Ward said to him, "But first I need to figure out how to control this damn thing."

"Henderson?" Sheva said weakly as she looked up at Henderson

"The drugs must be wearing off." Ward said to Henderson telepathically

"Yes Sheva it's me..." He said to Sheva, "Are you alright?"

"Why is your face upside down?" She replied

"Damn what kind of drugs did they give her?!" Ward said before Henderson motioned for her to be quiet

"Sheva just lay your down and rest of a while." He said to Sheva before she gave him the closest thing to a kiss she could while Ward's jaw dropped as Sheva pulled her head back leaving Henderson awe-struck

"I think I'm going to sleep now..." Sheva said before she plopped her head on the ground and fell asleep while Ward finally pulled her jaw up

"So...what's your plan to get out of here?" Ward asked him

"We'll wait for the others to get up before we go into details." He replied, "But for now we should rest and regain our strength."

Ward nodded and laid down next to them while Henderson laid his head down right next to Sheva's

"What am I going to do with you?" He thought to himself

**North of Las Vegas, Nevada **

**Area 51 â€“ R&D Center for the American Armed Forces and APM **

**Later that Night **

President Fettle was with Karlson and Tesla while they watched Calvin being sedated in preparation for his wing reconstruction surgery that would be taking place in a large specially-designed hangar

"So he's the only one we know of that it made out of the ambush?" Fettle asked the Karlsons

Karlson nodded

"Except he didn't make it out and they intentionally left him behind." He said to him

"Why they do that?" He asked him

"Who knows..." Karlson replied, "We're just all glad that he's still alive."

Fettle nodded

"You two stay here with him as long as you want and don't worry about the chances, I've made sure that the doctors and surgeons we're going to have working on him are the absolute best at what they do." He said

"Thank you Mr. President." Karlson replied

"I'm also aware of the alternative that some of the doctors have been purposing...surprised you two didn't choose it." Fettle said to them

"I'd rather be able to talk to my son normally than through a translation collar or telepathy." Karlson replied

"I guess I can understand that..." Fettle said, "You two should go get some rest, you both look like you haven't slept in ages."

Karlson and Tesla nodded and headed to the nearby hangar while Fettle looked back at Calvin

"You hold on in there Calvin Karlson, better days are coming." He said before leaving

**The End **

27. The Great War - Sneak Peak

Sneak Peak: The Great War

The USAS _Patton _and her three new sister-ships, the _Eisenhower_, _Abrams_, and _Bradley_ were flying in a box formation around the larger USAS _Jefferson City _as they flew over a large multinational Coalition fleet sailing eastward over the Viking Verse Atlantic while inside the _Patton_ in one of her hangars, the post-human dragons of the 502nd Special Operations Fighter Squadron(SOFS) and APMSF 1st Stormtrooper Legion were sound asleep with the exception of one Monstrous Nightmare, a now fully grown Calvin Karlson, whose wing reconstruction surgery had been a success although he got two large scars, one on each wing, out of it along with a new translation collar that had a special device installed into it, whose function only Calvin, his parents, and the scientists at Area 51 knew. But despite his fortune, Calvin was still haunted by the memory of had happened the day that his sister, Sheva and best friend, Emily Wensky along with Sergeant Jayden Henderson and entire his squad, Reaper, Major General Aberly Dreher, and Doctor Ward had been kidnapped by General Aemilius Casca, a post-human Night Fury of the elite Roman Praetorian Guard and his men while leaving Calvin for dead in the ravine after breaking both his wings which made him require the reconstruction surgery and those memories were what was keeping him awake as he stared out of the hangar at the late evening sky

Calvin sighed and shook his head, he knew he needed to sleep before they reached their destination, but yet he couldn't, but then suddenly his entire train of thought was destroyed when a tired Adam Wensky, a post-human Deadly Nadder, deputy commander of the 502nd, and Emily Wensky's father called out to him as made his toward Calvin

"Calvin...is that you?"

"Yeah it's me." Calvin replied as he hung his head while Wensky stopped alongside him

"Having trouble sleeping again?" Wensky asked him

Calvin nodded and Wensky sighed

"I can't stop thinking about ...that day." Calvin said to him, but Wensky knew what he meant

"I can't either, but I don't let myself dwell on it all the time like you do." He replied

"How do you do that?" Calvin asked him

"I think about better and happier times." He replied, "Just think about a really good memory you have of Emily and Sheva, because I'm sure you have tons of those in that rock of a skull of yours' and I ensure you that you will start sleeping better."

Calvin smiled

"Thanks for the advice Mr. Wensky." He said to Wensky, nodded

"No problem." He replied, "I wish I can say the same about them though."

"I do too." Calvin thought to himself as Wensky looked at the device attached to the back of his translation collar

"So what does that thing do?" He asked him

"That?" Calvin asked him, "Top secret, but you'll know what it does soon enough."

Wensky nodded

"Now come on, you need to get some sleep, we have a long day ahead of us." He said to him as he started to head back into the hangar

Calvin nodded and began to head to the area where he had been trying to sleep

"Better and happier times...got it." Calvin thought to himself before laying down and thinking about a happier time in his life

**Somewhere in the Alps **

**Gene Corp Research Facility **

The CEO of Gene Corp, Cameron Yates was admiring his most prized possession, a Skrill frozen solid in a block of ice which was being kept in a large room-sized freezer adjacent to his new office behind a glass wall while a Blackwater Officer stood beside him

"Sir, I'm telling you it is a bad idea to keep that thing here because the Americans are going to be searching every nook and cranny for him!" The Officer shouted at Yates, "And they're not going to stop until they find him!"

"The only people who knows he's here is me, you, and General Casca. Unless one of us spills the beans, they're not going to find him." He replied

"Well they may not find him, but they will find this place and him with it." The Officer said to him

"You worry too much." He replied

"And what happens if there is a malfunction in the temperature control in that room that we're not able to fix in time?" The Officer asked him

"As I said before, you worry too much!" Yates replied as he looked at the Skrill's face which was stuck in an expression of anger with his mouth wide open and wings spread open as if it was about to breath fire

"Did we lose anybody while they were freezing him?" Cameron asked

"There were some injuries, but no casualties." The Officer replied, "He did put up quiet a fight until the end however."

"I can see that in his face." Cameron said, "Leave us please."

The Officer nodded and took one last look at the frozen Skrill before leaving Cameron's Office

"I guess your luck finally ran out." Cameron said to the Skrill before walking back to his desk.

*****Author's Notes*****

1.)This will probably be part of the first or second chapters.

2.)Release Date: Sometime after HTTYD2's release.

End file.